







The ILLUSTRIOUS  
*French* **LOVERS;**

Being the True

**HISTORIES**  
OF THE  
**AMOURS**

Of several **FRENCH**  
**PERSONS of QUALITY.**

In which are contained

A great Number of excellent **EXAMPLES,**  
and rare and uncommon **Accidents;**

**S H E W I N G**

The Polite Breeding and Gallantry of the  
**GENTLEMEN and LADIES** of the  
*French Nation.*

---

*Written Originally in French,*  
And translated into *English* by Mrs. **P. AUBIN.**

---

**In Two VOLUMES.**

---

**L O N D O N :**

Printed for JOHN DAREY, ARTHUR BETTESWORTH,  
FRANCIS FAYRAM, JOHN PEMBERTON, CHARLES RIVINGTON,  
JOHN HOOKE, FRANCIS CLAY, JEREMIAH BATLEY, EDWARD SYMON. M.DCC.XXVII.

THE  
 FIFTH  
 EDITION  
 OF  
 THE  
 HISTORY  
 OF  
 THE  
 AMOIRS

Persons of Quality.

In which are contained

A full and complete  
 and the most accurate



The History of the  
 Affairs of the  
 Court and the

Admiration and Praise of the  
 King of France.

In Two Volumes.

LONDON:

Printed by John Baskett, at the  
 Office of the Stationer, in  
 St. Dunstons Church-yard.  
 Printed by John Baskett, at the  
 Office of the Stationer, in  
 St. Dunstons Church-yard.



TO THE  
LEARNED and INGENIOUS  
**Dr. SMITHSON.**

S I R,



Uch Learning and great Vir-  
tues, tho they always draw  
the Envy of the ignorant  
and vicious Part of the  
World on him who excels  
in either, yet do ever attract the Love  
and Esteem of all who respect, and are  
able to distinguish Merit ; and 'tis every

honest Man's Duty to applaud the few Excellent Persons this depraved Age produces, and to publish what their Modesty endeavours to conceal, that Mankind may be directed where to find a bright Example to follow. Your unaffected Piety, great Skill in that noble and useful Profession which you have so perfectly studied, and so successfully practise; your extensive Generosity, and unblemish'd Life, make you dear to all that know you, and must create in me, who love and honour Virtue and Learning at my Soul, the greatest Respect and Veneration imaginable for you. 'Tis these have made me your eternal Friend, and directed my Choice in this publick Dedication of these Histories to you; being fond of this Opportunity to inform the World of your Worth, who are doubly useful to Mankind; as being Heaven's Agent to repair their Healths and reform their Manners; whilst atheistical Quacks cheat them of their Fortunes and Lives, and, in all probability, of their eternal Repose, by flattering their hopes of Life,  
and



*The* DEDICATION.

V

and encouraging them in their Vices. And surely no Blessing can attend their Endeavours, who live at enmity with that God who made the salutary Herbs, and every healing Plant, balsamick Gum, and Mineral, that can mitigate our racking Pains and scorching Fevers, and render Life supportable. 'Tis half a Cure to see ones kind Physician, when he gives the unpleasant Potion, lifting up his Eyes to Heaven to ask a Blessing on his Toil ; one who won't flatter us in the sad Moments when he finds his Art can do no more. Such a Physician, such a Friend, may I, and every truly great and good Man find ; and such a one You are. May you live long, blest in your virtuous Consort's Company ; and may your Offspring answer your utmost Hopes and Wishes ; and may propitious Heaven daily augment your Power of doing Good, that you may have a greater Share of Glory in the World to come. Excuse this Rapture, occasion'd by my Zeal for Truth and You, and accept, as a Testimony of my Esteem, these two Volumes of True Histories ; which I

have at my leisure Hours translated from the *French*, and now dedicated to you, hoping they will help to divert you in those few Hours which you spare from your more useful Studies. Their coming to you in an *English* Dress, will not render them less acceptable, I am confident, since you are a true Patriot of your Country. And, be assured, if the Genius of the Age would permit, or give the least Encouragement for Works more useful and learned than Novels and Stories, I would have presented you with something better worth your Acceptance and my Labour. But that must be deferred till I find an *Augustus*, or at least a *Mæcenas*, to assist me. At present I can do nothing more, to shew that I am with the utmost Sincerity,

S I R,

*Your unalterable Friend,*

*and humble Servant,*

Penelope Aubin.



THE  
P R E F A C E  
T O T H E  
R E A D E R.



*THE French Historian a-  
vers all the following His-  
tories to be true ; and that  
he had them from such  
Hands as he could entirely confide in :  
Nay more, that he was personally ac-  
quainted with several of the Heroes  
and the Ladies, whose Lives he here  
presents to the Publick, being the La-  
bours of his leisure Hours ; which he*

*thus employ'd, because he thought such Histories were useful to excite those Virtues in others, which these illustrious Lovers practis'd. And thus he gives the Moral of each History.*

*Monsieur des Ronais's Story, says he, makes appear that if all Parents would act with regard to their Children, as Monsieur du Puis did with his Daughter, they would be always honoured and respected by them, and not end their days in Misery, by putting their Children into the Possession of all their Fortunes before they are dead; who are often so unnatural and ungrateful as to despise and neglect them, when they have no more to give.*

*In Madam de Contamine's History, he shews, That a wise and virtuous Maid may both hope and pretend to the greatest Advantages, and gain a Husband of superior Quality and Fortune, by her Virtue and prudent Conduct.*



## The PREFACE. ix

*Monsieur and Madam de Terny's Story makes appear how greatly Parents are to blame, who go to force their Children to do things contrary to their Inclinations : And that tho they may hinder them (and sometimes with Reason) from marrying according to their Fancies, yet they ought never to force them to marry against their Wills ; or to become Religious, especially when they find them much averse to it.*

*Madam de Jussy's Story shews, That when a young Lady has once had the Weakness to yield to a Lover, she ought to repair her Fault by keeping the Promise she has made to him, of being only his, even to Death ; and by her Constancy to her first Engagement, shew that it was no vitious Inclination that induced her to oblige him, but only Love, and the entire Confidence she had in him : which, if he proves a Villain to her, will make her pitied, and him scorn'd and despised.*

*Monsieur*

x      The P R E F A C E.

*Monsieur des Prez's History, shews the Fruits of a too violent indiscreet Passion on both Sides; and that a Woman should always give ear to a good Husband's Advice; and that when she is bereft of him, the whole World slights her: And that even our nearest Relations, if they are of mean, mercenary Dispositions, are not to be trusted with any Secret, because they will sacrifice all things to Self-interest.*

*Monsieur des Frans's melancholy Story, is an Advertisement to all Womankind, to be ever upon their Guard; and the more Beauty and Merit a Woman has, the more doubtful and cautious she must be of giving any Opportunities to the faithless Sex, who always plot the Fair Ones ruine, not trusting to her own Virtue alone: And here appears what Rage and Jealousy can spur a Man's Passions on to act even upon the Woman he loves most, and what cruel Tragedies Love and Revenge occasion in the World.*

Mon-

## The PREFACE. xi

*Monsieur du Puis's mad Adventures, are a Lesson to warn us of being Libertines in our Youth; and his Conversion to Virtue, after having acted the Part of a Rake and a Hero before, shew the Power a virtuous Woman, who has sense, may gain over the most vitious Man. His Justification of Silvia, in discovering the Secret of Gallouin's manner of gaining her; Gallouin's turning Friar, and strange Death; all shew, That the Man who is most addicted to his Pleasures, even to the sacrificing of his Fortune and Conscience for them, if he does but once give himself time to reflect, as a Christian, on his life past, he will not fail to repent and change his manner of life, and generally make a good End.*

*In fine: Monsieur Vallebois and Charlotte's History does shew, That Strangers are oft-times more touch'd with our Misfortunes than our nearest Relations; and that we must not judge of Persons by their outward appearance only, since, like Charlotte, noble  
Minds*



xii      The PREFACE.

*Minds may be lodged under mean Habits. 'Tis also a Warning against that ruinous Vice, Gaming; which reduced Monsieur Vallebois to such mean wretched Straits.*

*The Reader, says our Author, will not here find any of those strange and surprizing Accidents and Turns of Fortune which we are frequently entertain'd withal, in fictitious Stories and Romances, because here is nothing but what is really true and natural; which I thought, says he, it would be a Crime to embellish, and set off with Falsities of my own Invention. Nothing appears romantic but Monsieur du Puis's falling upon his Sword for Madam de Londe; but it is really matter of Fact, and therefore could not be omitted. The Stories are, says he, in my Opinion, very particular and extraordinary, and very different from any I ever saw in print: And if they had fallen into the Hands of such as are used to steal, from other People's Works, the Stories they turn into Novels and Romances,*



## The PREFACE. xiii

*mances, they might have been very easily improved into several Volumes. But I have related them just as they were related to me ; in the same Style, and as few words as if I were relating them to some of my Friends in private. And if the Publick gives these a good Reception, I hope to oblige them with something else of the same kind no less diverting and instructive. And now nothing more remains but to excuse the first five or six Pages at the beginning of these Histories, which seem a little obscure and embarrass'd, as to the first appearance of Monsieur des Frans, and his Friends meeting with him ; but our Author declares that he never staid, but took the first Notions that came into his Head, to introduce his Heroes and their Mistresses, and he hopes the Sequel makes all plain and intelligible. There are some who have blamed him for not relating all Silvia's Story intire, but dividing so that the Reader is long kept in suspense before he knows the Conclusion. To this he answers, That Madam de Londe being present at des Frans's relating his Story,*

#### xiv The PREFACE.

*Story, it was altogether improper to have her Brother's Crime mention'd before her ; and next, says he, why should I sully the Story with a Falseness, since the Story was related in this manner at different times ? Nothing more remains but some pleasant Reflections which he makes upon his calling his Heroines by their true Christian Names, such as Manon, Babet, &c. without any Titles, tho they were Persons of Quality. 'Tis true, says he, the Corruption of the present Age has brought a ridiculous Custom in the French Nation, of giving every Son and Daughter a different Name or Title ; and a Citizen, that has only a Thatch'd Cottage in the Country, besides his Shop in Town, shall call his Son the Seigneur de Chaumiere, or the Pomire, the Apple-tree or the Fountain : so that Tradesmens Children, like the ruin'd Nobility's, being used to false Titles, forget their Father's Name before they grow up, and fancy themselves Lords and Ladies. And can there be any thing more diverting, than to hear a Merchant*  
ready

## The PREFACE. xv

*ready to sit down to Table and asking for his Daughter of a Servant in this manner, Good Gad, where is Made-moiselle such a one? Go, Toinon, and tell her that we wait Dinner for her. Who would imagine that this Made-moiselle is his own Daughter? The Ladies and Gentlemen I treat of, says he, were People of better sense, and despised such Follies as much as I do; their Families were antient and noble. These Vanities always reign amongst the upstart Vulgar, or the degenerate Offspring of Nobility, whose Fathers having lavished their Estates, seek to hide their shame by giving new Titles to their unhappy Children, when the Lands are gone belonging to their own.*

*This is what the French Author says in behalf of his Work. And all I can say of mine, is, That I have endeavour'd to translate it both faithfully and in good Language, and a familiar Style, like his; and I hope it will meet with a kind Reception, since I am still pursuing my Design of recommending Virtue and Piety to the*  
*World,*

xvi    **The PREFACE.**

*World, and presenting new Examples  
worthy our Imitation to the Publick,  
who have hitherto shew'd me a great  
deal of Favour, which if continued  
may encourage me to publish something  
more valuable out of the French  
Tongue, to oblige my own Nation;  
which none has a greater love and re-  
spect for than their*

**Devoted Servant,**

**PEN. AUBIN.**

**T H E**





THE  
ILLUSTRIOUS  
*French* LOVERS.



*Aris* was not as yet obliged to Monsieur *Peletire*, late Minister of State, for building that beautiful Wharf which reaches from the Bridge *Notre Dame* to the *Grève*, which his Modesty call'd the *North-Key*; and the Publick, as an Acknowledgment of their Gratitude to him, have ever call'd by his Name, with Design to render the Memory of this *Prévôt des Marchands* immortal. When a well-dress'd Cavalier, whose Habit, Boots, and Horse, being very dirty, shew'd that he had come from far, found himself stop'd in one of those Crowds of Coaches which every day happens at the End of the Street *des Gesvres*, and unfortunately for him the Coaches meeting in Ranks on every side, he could by no means get out from amongst them. A Servant that

B follow'd

follow'd him was in the same Condition, and they were both in danger of being thrown, and crush'd to pieces between the Wheels. The good Mein of the Gentleman attracted the Eyes of all those that were in the Coaches round him ; the Fear they were in of his being hurt, made them call out and offer him a Place in any of their Coaches ; which he readily accepted of, and did not stand to deliberate which to chuse ; when one of the Gentlemen, who had a Lawyer's Gown on, calling to him more vehemently than the rest, made him look that way ; on which he thought he knew him, and was soon convinc'd he was in the right, seeing him throw himself half way out of the Coach-door, crying, *Monsieur de Frans, come in here.* Ah, Sir, said our Cavalier quitting his Horse, *how am I transported to see and embrace you again!* He leap'd up into the Coach, and bid his Servant get up behind and leave the Horses to the Hazard, rather chusing to risque his Horses than leave the Lad in danger to be hurt. This Action convincing the Lookers on he was some Man of Quality, the Masters of the Coaches round call'd to their Servants to take care to not harm the Horses. *Des Frans* hearing them, bow'd, and thank'd them with an Air that assur'd them they were not deceived in the good Opinion they had conceived of him. Their Commands were obey'd, and the Horses, contrary to all Appearance, got safe out of the Crowd, passing along with the Coaches. The Valet remounted his own Horse, and led his Master's by the Bridle, following the Coach he was in. *How*

## French LOVERS.

3

*How overjoy'd am I to see and embrace you, my dear Monsieur de Ronais, said des Frans when he enter'd the Coach. And I am the same, answer'd the Counsellor, to see you: I have this Day tasted the greatest Satisfaction I have a long time known, in seeing you again return'd to your Friends, after having so long afflicted them with your absence. Yes, answer'd des Frans, I am now come back to my Relations and Friends; and hope to restore Peace to my self by returning to my native Country, from which my Misfortunes have so long banish'd me; and 'tis a lucky Omen to me, to have thus met at my arrival the dearest and most sincere of my Acquaintance. I will not ask the state of your Health, because I see it is good; but I must ask you some News of my Family. My Lady your Mother is dead, said the Counsellor. I have been acquainted with that News long since, said des Frans sighing; but my Uncles, Have you no News of them to tell me? No, answer'd de Ronais, only that they are not in Paris. So much the worse, said des Frans; for I shall be at a loss where to live in Paris with Convenience. You have forgot, said the Counsellor smiling, that we are Friends, my House is big enough to hold us both; and since I now know that you have no Lodging provided, you will disoblige me if you go elsewhere: I hope I have a Lodging fit to receive you, for it is not long since that I thought to be marry'd; wherefore I took a large House, and furnish'd it, and am at present the only Person, except my Servants, that do live in it. I shall not refuse your Of-*

B 2

fers,

fers, said *des Frans*, 'twas only the fear of incommoding, that hinder'd me from asking this Favour of you ; but since you have removed that Scruple, I willingly renew the Freedoms of our Youth, and shall act without restraint. You will highly oblige me, answer'd *des Ronais*, and you would do unkindly to treat me with reserve.

By this time the Coach arriv'd at *des Ronais's* House, where they alighted. He led *des Frans* to a Chamber, and gave Orders that Dinner should be immediately served up without Ceremony. Are you willing, said *des Frans*, that we should live as intimate Friends? 'Tis my Desire, said *des Ronais*. Why then, said *des Frans*, do not take it amiss, that I cannot this Day dine, nor perhaps sup with you ; I am engaged elsewhere, at a Place where I must be immediately : It was on this Condition that I was let go, and I cannot stay with you no longer than to shift my Clothes and get a Taylor sent for, to take measure of me for a new Sute ; I must therefore beg you to send for one by one of your Servants. What, said the Counsellor, not dine with me. No, said *des Frans*, and I beg you to excuse me, and believe that 'tis some honourable Affair, and of great Consequence, that carries me elsewhere, and makes me break the Bounds of good-manners in quitting your agreeable Company. You are Master in all things here, said *des Ronais* ; but howsoever, whilst the Taylor is sent for we will drink one Glass of Wine to your good Success. Four or five, said *des Frans* smiling ; but give me leave

mean



## French LOVERS.

5

*mean time to shift me, for in the Condition I am in, dirty and unwash'd, I even hate my self.*

*Des Ronais* left him alone with his Servant, who had brought up his Portmantua; he soon changed his Habit, and went down to the Parlor to his Friend, who waited his coming: They talk'd of their old Acquaintance, particularly of *du Puis* and *Galloüin*: He learn'd that *du Puis* was still his good Friend, and that *Galloüin* was dead. *He is then dead*, said he with some Disorder. *Yes*, said the Counsellor, *he died like a Saint, and in such a manner as will surprize you when you know it: He was Four Years a Capuchine.* How, said *des Frans*, *did Galloüin die a Capuchine?* He would have proceeded, when the Taylor entered the Room; he took his Measure, and *des Frans* gave him Money to make a rich, fashionable Habit against the next Day, and Livery for his Servant. After which he told the Counsellor that he was extremely concern'd that he must leave him so soon: *For*, said he, *besides the Pleasure I should have had in being with you, what you have told me of Galloüin, has given me a great Desire to be inform'd of all that concerns him, for Reasons you are yet a Stranger to, which I shall inform you of my self hereafter: Pray, if you see Monsieur du Puis before me, assure him that I am return'd as much or more his Friend than ever.* *Des Ronais* ask'd him when he would return? He assur'd him it should be as soon as he could possibly, and so took leave.

B 3

After

After he was gone, *des Ronais*, who was one of *Monfieur du Puis's* most intimate Friends, tho he was fallen out with *Madam* his Cousin, sent to inform him of *des Frans's* Arrival. At which News *du Puis* came to his House ; but finding *des Frans* gone thence, he return'd every Day for three Days together ; the last of which *des Frans* return'd. Whence do you come, said *des Ronais*, after so long an Absence ? embracing him. I come, said *des Frans*, from assisting at a Lady's Marriage, which was perform'd the Night I left you. How, said *des Ronais* laughing, you have then already met with some pleasant Adventures, tho you have been here scarce three Days ? Yes, answer'd *des Frans* smiling, and very surprizing ones to ; I at first intended only to satisfy my Curiosity, but afterwards was induced to be zealous in the Service of an honest worthy Gentleman, on an Occasion which presented : I will tell you another time all the Story ; but at present I desire to know something else. Pray tell me what you have done in my Absence from France, and inform me of all that you know concerning *Galloüin*. I know nothing, said *des Ronais*, but what every body knows of him ; but *du Puis*, who will be here by and by, will tell you all Particulars, because they were dear Friends, and conceal'd nothing from one another, and their Affection lasted to death, and continues still fresh in the Survivor *Monfieur du Puis* : He has been here four times to see for you, and I have just sent to inform him you are come, and I doubt not but he will be here  
pre-

presently. I ought to have prevented that by going to him, said des Frans ; but I will now wait his coming, and learn from him what I am impatient to know : But I would fain learn from your self what has happen'd to you in particular. You told me you were on the point of marrying, and were prevented. I must know the Cause, and if it were a Marriage of choice or interest, that you mist of it. You shall be inform'd of all when you please, answer'd the Counsellor. Let it be this Hour than, said des Frans. I want time, said des Ronais, because du Puis will be immediately here ; and 'tis not convenient I should speak before him of my Rupture with his Cousin. What, my beautiful Partner ? said de Frans. Yes, the same, answer'd he ; she is the most faithless Maid in the whole World. You surprize me, said des Frans, to accuse her of Falshood, because you have so often boasted that she was the most sincere, constant Lady upon Earth. She is much changed, said des Ronais sighing, she so long kept up that Character that I had like to have been fool'd ; but at last I was undeceived, at the same Instant that we were going to conclude on our Marriage ; the manner I shall inform you of so soon as we have time.

The Taylor who had been sent for arriving, hinder'd him from proceeding ; he dress'd des Frans in a Sute of Cloths so well made and rich, that he appear'd altogether as agreeable as he was before he left France. Du Puis enter'd a few Minutes after, they mutually caress'd one another in the most tender

manner that Two sincere Friends could do after having been long asunder : not with feign'd Embraces and dissembled Kisses, as is too frequent in this depraved Age, but their Actions truly express'd the noble Friendship that glowed in their Hearts. *Des Ronais*, as Master of the House, the Supper being ready, usher'd them to the Table ; where being seated they pass'd the time in talking of all their old Acquaintance, and gave one another a general Account of what had happen'd to them since their Separation, referring to their better Leisure to give the Particulars. *Thus*, said *du Puis*, you find us much afflicted for the unfortunate Death of our poor religious Capuchine. It touches me, said *du Frans* : I was not his Enemy to so great a degree as to wish him dead. You would have been to blame to have been so, answer'd *du Puis*, since he had a sincere Esteem for you, and the Injury he had done you was the Occasion of his quitting the World. He did not injure me, cry'd *des Frans*, much confused. He injured you more than you imagine, cry'd *du Puis*, I am better inform'd of your Affairs than you are your self ; but fear nothing, your Secret is known to none but me, and never shall be divulged without your consent. You have no need to make a Secret of it here, said *des Frans*, I am ready to bear it whenever you please, and have promised *Monseigneur des Ronais* to inform him of all my Misfortunes ; therefore you may speak all things plainly. Then, said *du Puis*, I shall explain my self more fully, and beg his Par-  
don



## French LOVERS.

9

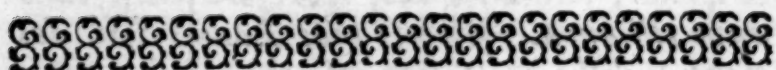
don that I have so long kept any thing a secret from him ; but when he knows the Importance of what I have to disclose, I am certain he has so much Honour as to agree with me, that it ought never to be reveal'd without your Leave ; and since you ask, I do assure you before him, that Galloüin did not design to injure you so highly as he really did, because he did not know that Silvia was your Wife, and also that she never thought to wrong your Bed ; but was forced to what she did by the powerful Force of Philters. I don't wonder that you ask not after her, for doubtless you know what is become of her much better than we do, tho a Letter she sent Galloüin six Months after she and you left Paris, which he shew'd and gave me a Copy of on his Death-bed, has partly inform'd us of the fatal Secret. Did the faithless Silvia, said des Frans, lifting up his Hands, then write to him ? Yes, answer'd du Puis, a Letter so spiritual and pious, that it might justify her doing it ; she inform'd him that she retired into a Convent, but conceal'd the Place, and advised him to do the same, which accordingly he did. Des Ronais interrupted them, saying to de Frans, You appear much concern'd, what share had you in Silvia's Proceedings, that you are thus moved ? Alas ! answer'd de Frans, that's to you a Mystery as yet ; but Silvia is dead : For her I fought with Galloüin, they were the Occasion of my leaving France ; she alone was the fatal Cause of all my Misfortunes, and made my native Country appear a Hell to me. I will inform you of all at our leisure, when

*Monsieur de Jeffy is present. Is he in Paris ?*  
*saïd de Ronais, and du Puis. Yes, saïd des*  
*Frans, we arrivèd together, we have been*  
*together for two Years past, and I have been*  
*at his Wèding since I left you ; he has at last*  
*married his old Mistress the beautiful Ba-*  
*beta Fenouil ; he has relatèd to me the fore-*  
*going part of his History, and I have seen the*  
*happy Conclusion. You have already met with*  
*some diverting Adventures, tho it is but three*  
*Days since you arrivèd in Paris, saïd de Ro-*  
*nais laughing. Yes, saïd des Frans, I have*  
*been at the Marriage of a Man who has been*  
*banish'd France above this six Years, with*  
*the Woman on whose Account he was banish'd :*  
*A Man whom the World has believed dead*  
*these four Years past, and yet has at his Re-*  
*turn found his Mistress still constant, for*  
*which Reason I adore her Virtues. He has*  
*had good Luck, saïd des Ronais, my Fortune*  
*has not been so good. You have no just Rea-*  
*son to complain, saïd du Puis, and if you*  
*would but hear Reason I could disabuse you,*  
*but you are deaf to me and every body else ;*  
*but I hope Monsieur des Frans will be heard,*  
*and reconcile you and my Cousin, who has*  
*sent by me to beg the Favour of his Company*  
*to-morrow, when he shall be inform'd of all*  
*the truth. Could I stay longer with you, I*  
*would even now in your Presence, saïd he to*  
*des Ronais, convince you of your Error ;*  
*and I must tell you she has condescendèd to do*  
*more to procure a Reconciliation with you*  
*than you deserve, if you refuse longer to*  
*hearken to Reason. I will not fail to wait of*  
*her,*

her, said *des Frans*. I am going to *Madame* *des Londé*, said *du Puis*, therefore must take Leave till anon. Who is that Lady? said *des Frans*. 'Tis a Sister of the unfortunate *Gallouin's*, said *des Ronais*, and our Friend's Mistress, to whom it is time he were marry'd; her maiden Name was *Nanetta*, but she is now the Widow of *Monsieur de Londé*, one of the most agreeable honest Gentlemen that ever was born. I knew him, said *des Frans*: Go, go, my Friend, said he smiling to *du Puis*, the Company of a Mistress is always to be prefer'd to a Friend's. I cannot avoid waiting on her to-day, said he, but to-morrow I will be at your service all day. He took Leave and left *des Ronais* and *des Frans* alone, who took that Opportunity to claim *des Ronais's* Promise of telling him what had happen'd between him and his Mistress; which he did in these Terms.



The



*The humorous* FATHER and  
LOVER: *Being the History*  
of Monsieur des Ronais and  
*Mademoiselle* du Puis.



Need not, *said he*, mention my Family and Birth, since you and I were born Neighbours and were educated together; I shall only relate what is past since we parted. Various Reports were spread of your leaving *Paris*; some were of Opinion that you were gone to the Army again; others fear'd that you had withdrawn, and quarrel'd a second time with *Gallonin* and kill'd him, and so conceal'd your self and escaped to some foreign Country; but some of your Friends, who guess'd rightly, suppos'd that you were retired with *Silvia*, who disappear'd just at the same time: In fine, every one spoke their Sentiments except your near Relations, and they were all silent; my Lady, your Mother was more reserved than the rest, which made every body conclude she was privy to the Secret, and deeply concern'd. *Gallonin* and *du Puis* did all that was possible to discover where you were; and at last, as *du Puis* has  
since



since told you, six Months after your Departure he retired to a Convent and became a *Capuchine*; giving no other Reason but that he was disgusted with the World, tho' it seems he had other secret ones which *du Puis* must acquaint us withal, and I at present am a Stranger to. Your Departure was long the Subject of our Conversations, and much regretted by all your Friends, but by none more than by Mademoiselle *Grandet*, who thought her self to have much Right to your Heart; she was long inconsolable. She has been since marry'd, but very unfortunately, and had not her Mother compel'd her to it, she had been still a Maid; she is, thank Heaven, now a Widow, and more beautiful and charming than ever, and has lately refused several very advantageous Offers; and being now free, will not sacrifice the Inclination she still has for you, to gratify another's. These are the very Terms in which she has express'd her Thoughts to Mademoiselle *du Puis*, from whom I had my Information, and I dare credit the Truth of it since they are inseparable Friends, and conceal nothing from one another. Perhaps this is what she wants to speak with you about. *You flatter me, said des Frans, I am not worthy to be so esteem'd by a Person of so great Merit.* You will soon be convinc'd I speak truth, *said des Ronais*, for you were no sooner gone but she declin'd all Company, and admitted none but those who by visiting her Mother got Sight of her; being her Neighbour, I often visited there, and the sweetness of her Conversation engaged me to covet

cover her Friendship, and, without becoming her Lover, I had the Honour to be her intimate Friend. There I saw Mademoiselle *du Puis*, who came to pay her a Visit in Company with her Mother, she was then about fifteen, (you saw her some time before, when you stood Godfather and Godmother together to a Child) she was just come out of the Convent where she had been bred from six Years old, to see her Father and return'd to it again, having staid but three Months in the World, because her Mother could not endure to be seen with a Daughter almost as tall as her self. You know she was a Lady that was a little too gay, and did some things that sully'd her Reputation, tho not criminal, and none but her Husband ever judg'd ill of her, which all the World condemn'd him for. You may judge of the Man when I tell you what he did the very Day that she died, which is now about four Years and a half ago: You know he was bred to the Sword, and had ranged the World and return'd little the richer, yet he was a Man of Wit, sincere and frank in his Conversation, and never trick'd any body but his Daughter and me. He had been very unsuccessful in all his Undertakings, and therefore was cautious how he parted with what he had gotten, and unwilling to Portion his Daughter tho his only Child, and would not dispose of her but according to her Merit and his Ambition; and so was resolv'd to keep her single, and what Fortune he had, so long as he lived, and not trust to Fortune any more. In his Youth he had been very debauch'd,  
and

and at the Siege of *Charenton*, being then a Captain, received three Wounds, and being like to die sent for a Priest, to whom he made a general Confession. He would not give him the Sacraments unless he would marry the Lady (his late Wife) who was then with Child by him, and to whom he had promis'd Marriage. They were accordingly married as he lay in Bed, and a Report was spread that they had been privately married a Year before; but yet the Truth got Air, and six Months after she was brought-to-bed o the lovely *Manon*, and never had a Child since. They lived very happily some time together; but *du Puis* being eight and fifty, and worn out with the Fatigues he had suffer'd, grew sickly and jealous of his Wife, who was young and beautiful, and loved Finery and Mirth, tho' innocent. She died in the Carnival-time, and her Husband went in Masquerade that very Night to the Marquis *de Verry's*, who gave a Ball and Treat, to entertain a young Lady of great Quality whom he married four Days after. *Du Puis* went mask'd to the Basset-table, and set fifty *Louis-d'ors* on a Card to the Marquis, who had heard of Madame *du Puis's* Death, and having an honourable Respect for her was concern'd for it; the Marquis play'd with him, and so did some others; and *du Puis* won six Hundred Pistoles, and this was, as he thought it, one of the most fortunate Days of his Life; because he lost his Wife, and got so much Money. Being ask'd to unmask he refused a-while, but at last yielded. The Marquis cried out, at sight of  
him :

him : *How*, said he, *a Man that has this Day lost a virtuous Wife, and run a Masquerading ! Monster, are these the Tears you shed for the Loss of one of the finest and best Women the World ?* Soft, my Lord, said he, *you feel the Loss of my Wife more than I do ; for tho I was the Owner, you had the Use of her : Had I lost my Money perhaps I might have cried, or at least been out of Humour, but having won I have Reason to be merry ; since I have lost a Wife who made me sad, and gotten what will make me gay ; but your Lordship having lost both a Mistress and your Money, may be concern'd, and so good-night to you.* At these Words he went briskly out of the House, and stay'd not for an Answer. The Company were ready to die with laughing, which confounded the Marquis, who protested the Lady was innocent, and that he would vindicate her Reputation to Death, desiring his Friends never to mention what had pass'd, or report what that ill Man had said. In fine, *du Puis's* Behaviour made the World censure him, and some suspected he had poison'd his Wife ; he foresaw this, and therefore had her Body open'd by the Surgeons, the Physician being present, and they declared that she died a natural Death. Thus he gave the World occasion to think ill both of him and her : A Husband's Jealousy, tho unjust, injures his Wife's Honour ; because the ill-natur'd World always judges the worst.

For his Daughter, (who has her Mother's Beauty) he continued her in the Monastery tho' she was seventeen, and had not his In-

firmities.



firmities made him want her to tend him and manage his House, she had been there to his Death; but about three Years ago, he shew'd her to the World, and call'd her forth to manage that Fortune that she must at his Death be the Mistress of. It was four Years since I had seen her the first time, but at this second View I thought her ten times more charming than before. I met her at Madam Grandet's, who was then married to Monsieur du Mongey; I am not able describe her, her Shape was divine, she had the Air of a Princess, a blooming Youth with a Skin whiter than Snow, which had never been exposed to the Sun or Air, but retain'd the delicate Look of her infancy; her Eyes are black, and have a brightness and languishing Softness that is inexpressible; her Lips are Coral, and her Teeth Ivory and Pearl: In fine, every Feature is perfect and charming, and such a Virgin-innocence adorns her Face, and all her Motions, Gaite, and Actions are so genteel, lively, and engaging, that she is a perfect Beauty; and has a Soul suting the bright Cabinet that holds it, a piercing Judgment, admirable Apprehension, vast Memory, with so much Modesty, that she charms all that converse with her. For my part, I no sooner saw, but I lov'd her even to Madness; I abandon'd my self to the Passion, and courted her, and was well received; but, tho she heard me, yet she return'd me no positive Answer. I remain'd long in Uncertainty, and it was by a lucky Accident that I discover'd, that she liked me well enough to have some serious Thoughts about

about marrying me : One Day when I was to visit her, a Priest was there, and the Discourse fell accidentally upon the Subject of Marriage, and what were just Impediments to render it unlawful. He said, ' The primitive Church ' was much more rigid in observing those ' things than the present ; and that it was ' not then permitted for Persons who had ' stood Gossips to a Child together, to marry ' one another : And that it was his Opinion, ' that it was very unfit that it should be now ' suffer'd, and had observed that the Children ' of such Persons were very unfortunate, by ' which God shew'd that he did not bless such ' Marriages no more than those of near Relations.' This Discourse made such an Impression upon her, that some Days after, a Gentlewoman, to whom she had promised to be Godmother to her Child, being deliver'd, sent for us, having often said she would have me and Madam *du Puis* stand together. The Husband came accordingly to me, and I promised to be there in the Afternoon ; but when he went to her, she refused, and said, she only promis'd it in jest ; but having no luck, the Children always dying, she would stand no more. The Gentleman came back to me, desiring I wou'd use my Interest with her. I promis'd to bring her, and accordingly went to her so soon as I was dress'd ; but she absolutely refused. At last I was so vex'd that I told her, I supposed it was because she would not stand with me. She answer'd briskly, *Indeed that is the Reason.* I continued to persecute her ; at last she reminded me

me of what the Priest said, blushing like Scarlet, and turn'd from me in great confusion, saying, *I have a good Memory, and will not venture to commit a Sin, or put it out of my Power to do any thing I may one time or other be persuaded to.* I was so charm'd at the tender and bashful manner in which she spoke these Words, that I scarce knew how to find Expressions to thank her, but she saved me that trouble ; for she staid not for an Answer, but fled to her Chamber and lock'd her self up : Madame *de Mongey*, at her Request, stood with me. That very Evening I return'd her my Thanks for this generous kind Discovery, and it being in vain to hide her Love any longer, we agreed that I should ask her Father's Consent, which I doubted not easily to obtain. As for my part, I was at my own disposal, being of Age, and having no Relations alive whose Consent needed to be ask'd. My Family and Fortune was superior to his, and therefore we supposed he would readily embrace the Offer ; but we were much deceived : For having employ'd one of my Relations to propose it to him, he gave him this Answer, That he was much obliged to me for the Honour I did him and his Daughter ; but, That he could not accept of my Offer, because he could not part with such a Part of his Fortune as was fit to offer a Man of mine ; that whilst he kept it intire, he could make a Shift to keep a Chariot, which his ill State of Health requir'd, and live handsomly ; but should he divide it with a Son-in-law, he must retrench his Expences and live meanly :  
And

And that he had saved what he possessed with great Difficulty, and was too old to get more; and therefore thought it was but Reason he should enjoy it whilst he lived. That he had taken his Daughter out of the Convent with Design that she should comfort and assist him in his Age, and not to give her away to another Man, who might hinder her, as his Wife, from being serviceable and paying him the dutiful Regard he could oblige her to whilst she was single. That if she was disobedient and negligent, or marry'd without his Consent, he should give away what he had to others, and leave her no more Fortune than what her Mother brought him, which she very well knew was never a Groat: And that if she desired to have what he had, at his Death, she must deserve it in his life-time by living single. That this was his Resolution unalterably; and desired none of his Friends would mention any such Proposals to him any more, as they valued his Friendship.

This Answer, like a Sentence of Death surprized us: She wept, and I was in the utmost Despair; but there was no Remedy but Patience. *Du Puis* was a positive Man, and had long before resolved what to do, and it was in vain to try to move him, tho we used all Means possible; and at last used one which had like to have intirely ruin'd us; which was, that we made his Confessor speak to him: He represented to him, That his Daughter might never again have so good an Offer as I was: That she would lose her  
Prime:



Prime : That she was of an Age to marry : That I consented to take her without a Groat Fortune, on Condition that he would promise to give her some at his Death ; and that he should enjoy it all during his Life : That in such a Son-in-law, he would find a double Support and Comfort : That in Conscience he was bound to consent to it, to prevent a thousand Misfortunes which his Daughter, being passionately in love, and cross'd, might occasion him : That the World was full of Examples of this kind ; and that he ought to prevent the worst by a speedy Marriage. In fine, This good Father said all that Reason, good Nature and Christianity could plead in our behalf, but did not succeed ; he had to do with a Man whom Misfortunes had soured, and who was an Enemy to Marriage. And he answer'd him to every Article in this manner : That he allow'd, that according to Appearance, he could not find a better Match for his Daughter ; but that he did not know but his Daughter's Fortune, when he was dead, might equal mine : That she was young enough to stay seven Years longer, without fearing any Decay : That the longer she lived single, the fewer Children she would have, and the less Care ; and that they would be stronger and longer lived, and that she would be more stay'd, and fitter to govern them and her Family : That as for my Offer, of letting him enjoy his Fortune whilst he lived, he did not think himself obliged to me for leaving him the Possession of what was his own already, and that his Daughter was so too ; and therefore

fore he resolv'd to keep her and his Estate so long as he lived, and not to strip himself before he was dead : That when once he had put it out of his power to dispose of his Fortune elsewhere, his Daughter and Son-in-law would be impatient for his Death ; and that he would not put them under a Temptation to offend God by wishing it : That the World was full of old People who had made themselves wretched by their foolish Bounty to their Children, who to the great Scandal of Piety and Religion, do neglect and despise them when they have got all they can ; and therefore he was resolv'd his Daughter should always depend upon him : That he knew Children made fine Promises to get their Ends ; but, when he had sign'd and seal'd, they might act contrary ; and therefore would not put it in his Child's Power to do ill by him : That he did not want a Son-in-law's Help, nor had Occasion for a Friend or a Lawyer, since he was out of Debt, and had a clear Estate : That for his own particular Use, he needed only a *Valet-de-chamber*, a Cook and a Nurse : That for his Daughter's Conduct ; he did not think Parents answerable for their Childrens Actions, when they let them want for nothing fitting : That he thought Parents much to blame to force their Children to marry, or go into Convents, against their Inclinations ; and that he would never do either ; resolving not to marry her whilst he lived ; but to leave her at liberty to dispose of her self and Fortune, after his Death : That, in the mean time, he debarr'd her of nothing ; but was more ready to

to give her Clothes and Money, than she to ask them, even to Profusion, and never call'd her to an Account; but left her to manage his House and Fortune; and that he knew nothing but the Desire of a Bedfellow that could incline her to wish to change her Condition: That if he thought she had such Inclinations, he could easily prevent his Dishonour and her Misfortune, by setting a Governess over her who should never quit her Company; or confine her to her Chamber, and never let her go on Pilgrimages, or on Pretences of Devotion, farther than the Parish-Church with her Attendant: That as for receiving Billetdoux and Love-Letters, he did not value it; since that Conversation (provided no Meetings were permitted) could never hurt her Virtue: But that he knew his Daughter's Virtue and good Education secured her, and had Confidence enough in her Conduct, not to restrain her from seeing me, or going abroad with me in Company: But that if she deceived him, and undid her self, he should not answer for it, and should justify himself to the World by giving her never a Groat; but would follow Madame *de Lepine's* Example, which was still fresh in his Remembrance.

*What is that Story?* said *des Frans*, interrupting him. Why 'tis a Lady, answer'd *des Ronais*, whose Daughter stole a Marriage without her Consent, and was carried, being taken in travail, to her Mother's to lye in; but she cruelly turn'd her out of Doors, and sacrificed her to Monsieur *de Pres* the Father of her Lover; and the poor young Creature

was

was carried to the Hospital of God, where she died that same Day. *I remember, said des Frans, that I have heard that dismal Story from a Gentleman of Paris, when I was at Lisbon. You shall know the Particulars of it, said des Ronais, from du Puis, for he knows it perfectly; we must engage him to tell it, for it is very extraordinary, and well worth our hearing. Well, we'll try what we can do with him, said des Frans, but I beg Pardon for interrupting you, and must desire you would proceed with your own History. Old Monsieur du Puis's tedious Discourse, tho, in my Opinion, very cruel, yet was very wise and prudent.*

Having thus concluded it, *said des Ronais, he hearing some Noise in the next Room, imagined his Daughter and I were there listening, as we really were. At which he began to satyrize upon us so comically, that we were both extremely mortify'd, and Mademoiselle fell a crying, on which we retired, having heard all this fine Lecture, which we heard him finish in this manner.*

*Sir, said he to his Confessor, am not I very unfortunate? I have toil'd and labour'd all my Life, more than can be imagin'd, to provide for old Age, and been very unsuccessful, having lost great part of my Fortune, not by my own fault, but by the Will of Heaven. I have just enough left to support me handsomely, and have but a short time to live, being gouty and paralitick. And having but one Child, who owes her Being and All to me, she now would leave and despoil me of Part of it, before Death gives her a Right to it all,*



to give it to a Stranger, who will not think himself oblig'd to me for it, or perhaps love her better than I did her Mother, to whom I made ten thousand Proteftations of my Love before I had enjoy'd her, but never cared a farthing for her after the first three or four Nights, tho I swore I would love her eternally; but Fruition murder'd Love: And had she not prov'd with Child, and the Apprehensions of dying frighted me, I had never marry'd her. Indeed I disputed it, as long as I was able, against a rigid Jesuit, who refus'd me the Sacraments unless I would do it, telling me, I was certainly dying, and would not recover; so for fear of future Punishments (for, alas! things appear to us quite different on a Death-bed, from what they do when we are in Health) I marry'd her, to legitimate the Child, and secure my self a Place in Paradise. Nor need I fear Hell, for she kept me eighteen Years in Purgatory, and I have done a severe Penance for escaping Death: but, by dying, she has at last freed me; and indeed it was the only thing she ever did to please me since our Marriage. 'Tis true, I lived quietly with her for my own Credit, and wink'd at what I thought amiss for my own and my Child's Honour, who has as yet behaved her self discreetly. I tell you this, *said he*, under the Seal of Confession. I have been very unfortunate all my life, and if my Daughter leaves me, I am determin'd to forget her, and give my Fortune to Strangers; and retire to some place where I may be respected, and die in peace. We heard no more; but

went down into the Parlor, where we look'd on one another for some time, with much Disorder. At last the good Father came to us, and related in few words, what Monsieur *du Puis* said in relation to our Marriage, without mentioning the severe things he said of his Wife and us ; but told us in the conclusion, That we should lay aside all Thoughts of marrying whilst he lived, and speak no more about it to him, lest it should ruin us : That he found he was unalterable, and would never move it more to him if he lived a hundred Years. *God forbid*, said I, I know not in what manner I spoke this ; but the Confessor and Mademoiselle *du Puis* both fell a laughing. When the Priest was gone, she went up to her Father, who had call'd for her, and bid me come to her again in the Evening ; and we had resolv'd to pass the time at the Gate together, if we could not go a walking as heretofore : so we parted. As soon as she enter'd her Father's Chamber ; The World is not like to be at an End yet, *said he*, I perceive the Desire of increasing it continues. You thought a Priest would carry your Cause as well as your Mother's ; but you are deceived. Pray importune me no more, I am too old to be tutor'd ; I read you no Lectures, but confide in your Conduct, take care not to offend me any more : I shall not restrain you from seeing Monsieur *des Ronais*, this accomplish'd Lover whom you so much esteem ; govern your selves so wisely that the World may have no just ground for Censure. I shall say no more ; but take care to merit my Fa-  
your

vour and his Respect; for if you disoblige me, you will dearly repent it all the Days of your life. After this, he never mention'd this Step of ours any more. I now found my self oblig'd either to quit my Mistress and Hopes, or become a perfect romantick Hero, and love like a *Platonick* so long as he lived, which was about eighteen Months; when his Death releas'd us.

I had all the reason in the World to believe this Lady loved me, all Favours that were honourable she granted me. I saw her every Day; nay, we often went abroad together, and I was always welcome to *du Puis*, who was infinitely kind and civil to me, tho he doubted not but I wish'd him in the other World.

I was oblig'd to go to *Angoumois*, for some of my Family Affairs, in which I was the chief Person concern'd: I design'd to stay but six Weeks, but I was oblig'd to stay much longer. I beg'd her before I went, to give me her Picture; which, after some little Ceremony, she condescended to do, on condition that I should give her mine: I had mine drawn immediately, and having caused it to be decently set in a plain Gold Case, presented it to her: After which she gave me hers, on the Day when we parted; but it was much finer and richer than mine; the Painting was extreme fine, and perfectly resembled her, a row of large Pearls was set round the inside of the Case next the Picture, there was a Looking-glass on the other side, as there was in mine; on the back of the Case, in Enamel,

was represented, on the side behind the Picture, *Dido* on the Funeral Pile with a Dagger in her Hand, and a Sea cover'd with Ships, of which the Admiral appear'd at the Head of the Fleet, with the faithless *Æneas* standing on the Deck; with this Motto round the Picture,

*Je suivrois son exemple.*

In *English* :

I will follow her Example.

On the back of the Glass was painted a Gentleman riding full speed, and a *Cupid* flying before him holding the Bridle of his Horse, going from a City, and several fine Women; the Motto round it was,

*Rien ne retient un Amant conduit par l'Amour.*

In *English* :

Nothing can detain a Lover, when Love calls him away.

This was a very rich Present, and the Jeweller who sett my Picture, assur'd me, both the Picture and Case was admirably well done, and well worth, at least, two hundred *Louis-d'ors*. Nothing could better shew her Affection; for the Gentleman on Horseback, admonish'd me to return with all speed; and the Women, to beware of breaking the Vows I had made her; and *Dido*, assured me of her Constancy, even to death. Yet my *Dido* has play'd me false; but of that I shall talk hereafter.



I leave you to guess what Acknowledgments I made her, and what Protestations of Constancy pass'd on both Sides. I parted with the utmost regret, and tho I staid longer by much than I design'd, yet I return'd more in love than I went from her. She likewise seem'd to be more fond of me, and less reserv'd; and received me with more Joy and Affection than she had ever shewn before. We had not miss'd writing to one another every Post, and I sent her Presents of whatever I could get that was rare, and worthy her Acceptance.

I was charm'd with her Wit in Conversation before; but her manner of Writing was incomparable, her Style was lively, easy, comprehensive, and so sweet and touching, that she inspir'd the Reader with every Thought and Passion she pleas'd. I was so proud of my Mistress, that I could not forbear shewing her Picture to the Country Ladies where I was, who rally'd me for my Indifference for them; and they all confess'd, that if she were as witty as handsome, she was a Master-piece of Nature: Then my Vanity made me shew them one of her Letters, which I had just then received. I have all her Letters by me, and that is all that I have remaining of hers; for to prevent her asking me to return them on our Rupture, I sent her word, that I had burn'd them. At these Words, he reach'd a little Cabiner, in which he kept them, and open'd one and read it to *des Frans*, the Contents of which were as follows:

• **I** F I were govern'd by my Reason I should  
• write no more to you, for I am really  
• very much displeas'd: Can any thing be  
• more provoking than to receive from you  
• Letters writ in a Style so pleasant, and to  
• hear that you enjoy your Health perfectly?  
• You have told me a thousand times that  
• you loved me, and that you would not stay a  
• Month from me on any Consideration. I  
• let you go on this Condition; and four  
• Months are already pass'd, and yet you are  
• neither sick nor lunatick. How happy are  
• you that have such a strong Heart and Brain,  
• that is proof against the racking Pains of  
• Absence and Jealousy! I am not so happy  
• as to be like you; I am jealous to the last  
• degree, and could wish that all the World  
• hated you so, that you may be forced to re-  
• turn to me at last: yet, on reflection, I  
• wish the reverse, and desire my whole Sex  
• would court and follow you, that I might  
• be justify'd in the Choice I have made of  
• you; but tho I would have all Women look  
• on you with my Eyes, yet I would not have  
• you turn yours upon any body but me, for  
• I begin to fear the provincial Beauties have  
• supplant'd me. When will you return?  
• or must I see you no more? Have you no  
• better Testimony to give me of your Con-  
• stancy than Letters? Adieu. I am so dis-  
• tracted that I cannot write Sense. I resolv'd  
• to quarrel with you at the beginning of this  
• Letter; but your Idea, when we really  
• loved, has so strongly possess'd my Imagina-  
• tion,

tion, that I cannot think it possible that you are changed, and still flatter my self you will soon return as amorous and passionate as ever, and put an End to my Anger and Suspitions. Mademoiselle *Mallet* has this Day made her Vows, and is at last a Nun : How happy is she if her Heart be disingaged from the World ! But how wretched if she still loves *Beaulieu* with the same Sincerity that I do the unkind *des Ronais* ! Be constant and return soon.

*Adieu.*

Shutting up the Letter, the Ladies said they were all charm'd ; and instead of tempting me to be false, did nothing but excite me to be constant to one so worthy to be beloved. I did all that was possible to finish my Affairs in order to return to her, but was forced to stay two Months longer at *Angulesme*, during which time her Letters were the Subject of our daily Conversation, and her Health was toasted at every Meal. But I had a Rival at *Paris*, the Son of an Officer of the King's Household, a young Courtier, who made love to my Mistress : but being a Novice who had just left the Schools, and as ignorant of the World as if he had never been without his College Walls, she made him her Diversion ; and so described him to me in her Letters, that *Cato* himself would have smiled, had he seen them ; and all those to whom I shew'd them, admired the Vivacity of her Wit, and Delicacy of her satirical Style. In fine, I return'd more enamour'd

than ever, and fully resolv'd to use the last Efforts to obtain *du Puis's* Permission to marry her; but he having got sight of some of the Letters I writ to her on this Subject, had us'd all possible Precautions to prevent me. She received me with open Arms; we both wept for Joy, and I fell at her Feet in so great a Transport, that for some Moments I could not speak; and I perceived she was little less disorder'd than I was. After a thousand tender Expressions and Embraces, I told her my Resolution to purchase her Father's Consent at any rate; and the next Morning early I went to him, when she was gone to Prayers, which I thought the most proper time, and threw my self at his Feet, and intreated him to give me his Daughter in her Shift, without a Groat Fortune, or any Hope or Pretence to any thing after his Decease; offering him, That he should give his Fortune to whom he pleased; That I would renounce all Pretensions to it, and settle upon her whatever Part of my Fortune he thought fit. Could I do more? He seem'd touch'd with the generous manner of my Procedure, and mused awhile before he answer'd. At last he told me, That my long Absence had made him conclude, that I had laid aside all Thoughts, of his Daughter; and that he had therefore hearken'd to some Proposals made him by an intimate Friend, whose Son was fall'n in love with her as well as I; and thinking you (*said he*) would not take it ill, I have given him my Promise that he shall have her, and all the Devils in Hell shall not make me  
break



break my Word : Yet I will not force her ; for if she will not consent to it, I will think no farther of it. Compleat your Bounty, *said I, embracing his Knees* ; and since you at last consent to let her marry, give her to me if she desires it, and makes me her Choice.

The Transport I was in made me add many Reasons ; so that at last I extorted from him a Promise to give her to me, if she desired it. And he made me promise, that if she declared herself in favour of my Rival, I should quit her ; which I freely consented to. Then he smiled, and said, You are very confident of her Affection to you, I find, since you are so positive of her Consent ; but beware you be not deceived ; you are little skill'd in Women, I perceive ; they are a subtle Sex, and very changeable. I know her perfectly, *said I*, and fear nothing : She is constant, and above the little Artifices and Frailties of mean Souls : I dare trust my Fate in her Hands. He look'd ironically upon me, and turn'd away. Tho I put a good Face upon it, I was at this Moment stung with Jealousy ; and so going down into the Parlor, waited for Madam *du Puis's* return home with much impatience. It was not long before she came, and was surpris'd to find me there so early ; but much more when I told her the Reason of my coming. You will undo us, *said she*, you ought to have first consulted me, and have ask'd my Consent : He has promis'd me to another, and only fools you, and I am positive will never keep the Promise he has made you. This Answer threw

me into a Passion : I have nothing, *said I*, to fear, but from your self ; and if I am not happy, it must be your own fault : Your Father, doubtless, is sensible that you are false, and do prefer my Rival in your Heart before me ; if so, it is no time to dissemble, either declare your self in my Favour this very Moment, or expect never to see me more. I spoke these Words in so haughty a Tone, that she knew I was in earnest, and calmly answer'd : If you suspect my Fidelity to you, after all the Proofs I have given you of my Affection, 'tis just that I should punish you with refusing to expose my self, by declaring that I love you in so publick a manner, and make you wait longer for a Happiness you don't deserve at present : I could convince you how imprudent the Step is you have taken, but this is no proper Place to do it in ; meet me at three in the Afternoon in the Garden of the Arsenal, there we may talk alone without being interrupted ; and I will acquaint you with things you are yet a Stranger to, and put an End to your Uneasiness. She said no more, but went up Stairs to her Father. I fail'd not to keep the Assignation. We met : I am, *said she*, at a loss to know my Father's Design ; he aims, I believe, at making you jealous, and parting us ; he despises the young Fop he has promised me to as much as I do, and knows I will never consent to have him, yet has positively promised that I shall ; and since you went away this Day, has sent for him and his Father, to conclude on our Marriage : he has at the same time promised you,  
that

that if I consent I shall be yours. I am determin'd to comply with your Desires ; and this very Hour, and in the Presence of your Rival, to convince you of my Affection and Fidelity, and expose my self. Tho I know it will not procure our Happiness, let us put him under a Necessity of keeping his Word, or being ridiculous. I was so transported at her Generosity, that I went into the Coach which had brought her and waited, which was a Hackney, for she did not dare to make use of her Father's on this Occasion ; and we went together directly to Monsieur *du Puis*, whom we found quite changed from what he appear'd to be in the Morning, and seem'd to have repented of the Promise my violent Importunity had extorted from him. He was indeed resolved that I should have her, but not whilst he lived ; and aim'd to sow dissension between us only to delay our marrying, but not to part us quite ; and meant by this Trick to engage me to her the faster, by her being put to this Trial : in order to which he had in my Absence procured me this worthless Rival, whom he used as his Tool, whose Father he had given his Word to, that his Son should have his Daughter, provided she consented. When we enter'd the Chamber, my Rival, young *du Pont*, and his Father were there : Monsieur *du Puis* had told him, That finding himself declining he resolved to see his Daughter disposed of, and had sent for him to conclude the Affair. This so transported the young Fool, who was mad in love with her, that he hung about his Neck,  
call'd

call'd him Father, and ask'd when the Day should be ; but the Father prudently thank'd him, with many Acknowledgments of the Favour he had done him in preferring his Son before so many Men of greater Fortune and Desert who had courted Madam *du Puis* ; then next proceeded to talk of Portion and Settlement, as if all things were ready to be agreed. *Du Pont* granted all Monsieur *du Puis* ask'd, and left all to his Disposal. During this Discourse we arrived : My simple Rival came briskly up to her, and with a ridiculous Air of Assurance, said, Mademoiselle, give me leave to testify my Joy to you by this Kiss ; your Father has this Day made me the happiest Man on Earth, by giving you to me ; for I know you are a Lady of more Wisdom than to reject his Choice. She blush'd, and was in great Confusion, but yet did not hesitate ; but immediately threw herself at her Father's Feet, regardless of the Father and Son, and said all the handsome things in my behalf that was possible ; nay, she proceeded to speak some bitter things against my Rival, and shew'd such a passionate Love and tender Respect for me, that I could scarce forbear falling at her Feet, to thank her. She concluded with assuring him, that as she was resolved never to marry against his Consent, so she never would yield to marry against her Inclination : That I was her Choice, and she would never break the Faith she had given me. Then I seconded her, and reproached him sharply with his breach of Promise to me. In fine, old *du Pont*, who was a Man of Honour, took



took our Part, and told him, he never would have made any Advances in relation to his Son, had he been inform'd of our Engagement before: That he could not do better than to unite two Persons whose Hearts and Affections were so join'd: And that he counsell'd him, both as an honest Man and a sincere Friend, to delay our Happiness no longer. *Du Puis* was quite confounded, and at last fell into a Passion, calling his Daughter insolent and immodest, for declaring herself so boldly before the World: That she wanted the Respect that was due to him and herself: That tho he had promised not to force her to marry against her Will, yet he was resolved not to consent to her Choice. I reproached him in vain with his Promise to me, he was immoveable; and turning rudely away, left us. Old Monsieur *du Pont* was surpris'd; the Son was distracted to find his Hopes all frustrated, Madam *du Puis* was drown'd in Tears, and I was so enraged that I knew not what I said: she retired to her Chamber, I follow'd her and there we consoled our Misfortunes; Monsieur *du Pont* follow'd Monsieur *du Puis*, and did all that was possible on our behalf. Madam *du Puis* and I went down into the Parlor, where in some time the two *du Ponts* came to us; I expected a Quarrel from my Rival, but was deceiv'd: the Father and Son handsomly ask'd Pardon for the Trouble they had occasion'd us, and Madam *du Puis* obligingly told him, She was sorry her Heart was pre-engaged, otherwise she should have respected him before any Man; but that her

In-

Inclinations being fix'd, she could not accept of a second Choice. Come my Son, *said the Father*, take your last Leave of Mademoiselle, and let us expiate our Fault by giving her no farther subject of Complaint against us by repeating your Visits here, where your Presence and Addresses are distasteful. My passive Rival readily obey'd, and we parted with a hundred Compliments on all sides; and indeed he was very civil, for he never return'd to trouble us any more.

Thus I got rid of my Rival, and yet was never a jot the happier; we found it was in vain to make any farther Attempts upon her Father, and so resolved to wait with patience, and expect from Time what we could not now obtain. I took no farther notice to Monsieur *du Puis*, nor he to me or her, of what had pass'd; but I went every Day to visit there, and was received as if I had been his Son, and all the World look'd upon me as such, and no Person presum'd to rival me; and indeed he always design'd his Daughter should have me, that is, when he was dead: Nay he loved me dearly, as he manifested in less than a Month after this Quarrel in the most generous manner imaginable. You must know that I had agreed for the Post I now possess, during the Life-time of him I succeeded: he dying at this Juncture, and I having engaged to pay what I was to give for it all at one Payment on his decease, by ill luck a Banker who had above twenty thousand Crowns of mine in his Hands, died at the same time, and, as is very frequent with that  
fort

fort of People, left his Affairs so intangled that there was no getting any Sum of Money there, and I fear'd it was in danger of being all lost. This oblig'd me to seek out for Money which was very scarce, so that I offer'd to mortgage my Lands; but this must take up some time, which put me to a great Dilemma. I know not how *du Puis* came to hear of it, for I never mention'd any thing of it to him nor Madam *Manon*; but he borrow'd Money of all his Friends, nay even pledged his Plate, and, when I least expected any thing of this nature from him, sent her to me to tell me, That her Father hearing I had Occasion for Money, had sent me a Note for twenty thousand Crowns, and if that would not suffice, he would be bound for me for whatever Sum I wanted more; she told me, moreover, That she was quite astonish'd when she saw him send the Plate out of the House, and borrow, and call in Money at such a Rate, and fear'd he was going to make away all he had. I was so surpris'd, for my part, that I knew not what to think: This generous Deed of his made me forget all he had before done to vex me, and from this Moment I dearly loved him. This Supply arriv'd very luckily, for I was to pay the Money for my Post that very Afternoon. The first thing I did was to go and return him Thanks: I got into the Coach with Madam *du Puis*, and went to him. I made him a thousand Acknowledgments for the Favour he had done me, and offer'd to give him my Note, or Bond, or the Deeds of my Estate, as a Security; but he refus'd all, and

and would not suffer me to say half I would. Say no more, *said he*, a Friend is best known when wanted: I know you have often wish'd me dead; but I shall convince you that it is more to your Advantage that I am still living, no Man loves you better than I do; go finish your Business and come to Supper with me, and then we'll talk farther. I was much pleased with his sincere plain way of treating me, and accepted his Coach to go about my Business, which I that Day finished to my Satisfaction, and return'd to Supper; where I again renew'd my Acknowledgments to *Monfieur du Puis*; but he still interrupted me: *Morbleu, said he*, give me leave to speak, and don't teaze me any more: Did I not more consult your Interest than my own, when I refused to give you my Daughter without a Fortune, as you desired me? Had I consented to your Marriage, and given you the Money I have this Day supply'd you withal, after you had marry'd her you would not have thought your self obliged to me; but now I have found the way to convince you that I am your real Friend, and love you sincerely: My dear Friend, *said he, clapping me on the Shoulder*, learn of me to be always the Disposer and Master of what you possess, and so engage your Children to respect and court your Favour, and never divest your self of your Fortune before you die, to depend on them; manage them as I have done *Manon* and you, for I look on you both as mine, and you will be ever honour'd and rever'd. Tho his Morals were very displeasing to us, yet in my Soul



Soul I could not but confess they were prudent, and too often true ; and if all Parents would act so, Children would be more obedient ; and it is very improper that those to whom we owe our Beings should depend upon us ; whereas it is natural, and sutable to the Laws of God, that we should depend on those who brought us into the World. I could not but admire this Man's Resolution, who tho he loved me so well, yet would not give me his Daughter, because he would continue the sole Proprietor of her and his Fortune. Nor would he be persuaded to take any Security or Acknowledgment under my Hand for the Money, part of which I that Night return'd him, having more than sufficed for my Occasions, and in some time after the rest. Sure, *said he*, you expect to die before me, and never have *Manon*, or else you might have kept this Money. It was not long before he gave me another Proof of his Love : There was a very pretty young Woman who lived with *Madam de Ricoux*, at whose House I lodged, for it is but since *du Puis's* Death that I have kept House, till then I boarded with this Lady who was my Relation ; and I kept but three Servants, a Coachman, a Footman, and *Valet de Chamber*, to whom I gave board-Wages : The young Woman was well born and bred, she came often into my Apartment with Messages from her Lady, to take my Laces and Linen to mend, or bring my Chocolate ; sometimes she would come on frivolous Errands three or four times following, when I was sitting alone a reading ; this put  
ill

ill Thoughts into my Head. In fine, tho I conversed with Madam *du Puis*, as Angels do with one another, yet Nature inspired me with mortal Desires with one who seem'd as willing as I; in short I dally'd with her for Diversion, she was gay and witty, and but Fourteen; we two made a third. It was a pretty while that we carried on this Intrigue without being suspected; but at last all came out, and *du Puis* was inform'd of it, and that she was near her time, and had begun a Suit against me in the Bishop's Court; and one came and told him, That that very Morning she had obtain'd a Decree against me. So soon as he saw me enter his Chamber, he told me all, and put me into the greatest Confusion that ever I was in all my Life; but he would not speak before his Daughter, yet she overheard every Word. Tho it is but a Trifle, *said he*, yet it will disgrace and vex you should you be arrested, especially at this time, when you are just entering on the Stage of the World in so considerable a Post, and blast your good Name: Stay here in my House, where no body will dare to enter to look for you, and I will go and make up the Matter; but first ingenuously tell me whether, when you ruin'd her, you did not make her a Promise of Marriage, or on what Terms you gain'd her. I assur'd him I never made her any Promise, but only made her a Present of thirty *Louis-d'ors*. You bought a mortal Sin, *said he laughing*, very dear, my Friend; but did you give her nothing since? No, *said I*, she would never take any thing, tho I often offer'd

offer'd her Money and Presents. She was in the right, *said he*, a good-natur'd Girl, I warrant her ; Interest made her yield, and Pleasure made her continue her Satisfaction. But to be serious, we must put an End to this Business quickly. He had not been able to ride in his Coach for some Months before, and was very unfit to go abroad ; yet, tho his Daughter and I beg'd him not to venture, he went out in a Chair. I know not whither he went ; but in four Hours time he came home again with a Parchment-Writing in his Pocket, which pulling out and shewing to me ; Here, *said he*, is *emplastrum contra contusionem* ; your Lady cannot now arrest you, you may if you please punish her ; but that I know you scorn to do. I have a Decree against her, and she will soon be humbled to come to your own Terms : I have sent an Officer to her. In fine, the poor Girl was so frightened, finding what powerful Friends I had to stand by me, that instead of going about to compel me to marry her, she beg'd for an Accommodation, and accepted of a small Sum of Money, on condition that I should take care of the Child. So the Affair was ended in two Days, tho with no small Expence. The Child died in a Fortnight after it was born, and *du Puis* and his Daughter were so kind, to procure my Peace, and so manage the poor Girl's Reputation, that they got her marry'd to one of his Country Tenants : and Monsieur *du Puis* gave her a Present, and oblig'd me to contribute something as a Portion for her ; and she lives

lives very happily, and, for ought I know, very honestly.

This Business caused me to have some trouble with my Mistress, who was much displeased, and continually reproached me for being false to her, as she call'd it; and it was a Comedy, to hear Monsieur *du Puis*, who was a pleasant Droller: These Maids, *said he*, are strange Creatures, the poor Men can't live at quiet for them; poor Monsieur *des Ronais* resisted all he could, I am confident; but the Women will not be denied, not a Day passes but some Woman is undone; one dies in Child-bed, others clandestinely get great Bellies and lose their Reputations, Friends and Fortunes: Madam, the Viscount's Wife, had like to die in Labour but six Months ago, she suffer'd insupportable Pains, and was so ill many Days that her Life was despair'd of: She swore by Heaven and her Soul, that if she recover'd this time, her Husband should never come to Bed to her any more, forswore all Communication with Mankind, yet she is again with Child, and 'tis reported that she keeps a Gallant beside her Husband; sure the Company of a Man must be very pleasing to that Sex, Curiosity draws them in to taste the Pleasure; a Lover surprises them in the Moment of Temptation, they resist a little, to render the Conquest more agreeable to the Man; at last they yield thro' Frailty, and then grow bold and continue the vicious Course by Inclination; and in time they grow audacious, and sollicite the Man, who being tired and cloy'd, frys the Woman

he



he pursued, and so forces her to seek for others, till at last the Devil seizes both the Gallants and Mistresses. His Style was so satyrical, it was impossible to forbear laughing. When he was in this vein, his Daughter always quitted the Room if she could so soon as he began; but he was often so malicious, that he would be sure to prevent it, by employing her about him, or when we were seated at Table. She often defended her Sex very handsomly: Why, *said she*, do you not fear my Conduct with Monsieur *des Ronais*, since you think so ill of Women? No, *said he*, if I lock'd you up from him I should fear you; but Women left at liberty, are wisest: You are (tho not exempt from Inclinations) a Woman of Sense, and know your Duty; and he will never tempt you himself, because he designs you for a Wife. Confess now, *said he to me*, have you ever had any Thoughts of attempting my Daughter's Honour, when you have been alone with her? I dare be confident you have not. No, *said I, smiling*, not yet: But why do you put me to so cruel a Trial, and run so great a Venture? How can I tell but my Patience may be worn out, and my Love daily augmenting, may tempt me to commit some Extravagance? Since you appear to approve of our coming together, why do you keep us in Pain? I daily press'd him in this manner, but could never get a positive Answer. Thus we pass'd our time. I was continually with my Mistress, and was treated as if I had been her Husband; there wanted nothing but the freedom of sharing a Part of her Bed with

2

her,

her, which I did all I was able, to make her consent to : I urged the particular Love and Esteem her Father had for me : That he had declared, that he design'd her for me ; and his Tenderness for her : That we were assur'd of his Consent, if our secret Converse were discover'd ; and that it was the only Means to facilitate our Marriage, when he saw no other Remedy or Means to prevent it with Honour. But all my Rhetoric was lost, she heard me patiently, but it prevail'd nothing upon her. She smiling, answer'd me always in one Tone: That she loved me too well to run the Risk of losing me : That her Mother's Example was sufficient to warn her ; as was my own Adventure : What haste are you in ? *said she laughing*, you know where to find what you ask for in other Places. No, *said I*, I can find elsewhere what may satisfy a sensual Desire, but 'tis with you only that I can enjoy true Satisfaction. 'Tis all Chimera and Fancy, *said she*, I am certain. I could never get any other Answer from her ; so that at last I began to be so used to live with her after this *Platonick* manner, that I seem'd to have forgot we were of different Sexes : I convers'd daily with a Man whose Death could only make me happy, and yet one whom I could not hate ; one who used me like his Son, and yet made me languish in Misery ; he tortured and diverted me at the same time : I every Day saw a Woman whom I loved even to Distraction, and of whom I was passionately beloved ; yet I grew insensible, and felt none of those warm Inclinations which Love inspires ; for  
which

which I can give no other Reason, but that finding the Impossibility of succeeding, my Body grew to be in subjection to my Mind, and all my Passions were become subservient to my Reason.

In fine, Having lived a long time (to my thinking) in this manner, *du Puis* fell sick, and became extreme weak on a sudden; he had lived long enough to think of dying, and prepared for it as became a Christian: and finding his Time was come, he was desirous to make me amends, and to see me happy before he died; and having received all the Sacraments of the Church, he caused me to sit down on his Bedside, and desired all but his Daughter and me to quit the Room. Then he briefly related to us all his Life past, which was a Series of Troubles and Misfortunes; but amongst all his Debaucheries and Flights there appear'd a great deal of Honour and Generosity, and something very noble and honest; and certainly he was a Man of excellent Principles. He told me, the many Losses and Misfortunes he had met withal, had render'd him so very cautious and careful to provide for the future: I give you nothing but your due, *said he*, in giving you my Daughter, you well deserve her, she is justly yours on a thousand Accounts; I ask both your Pardons for having kept you so long asunder; but I hope you will consider, that the fear of losing the Comfort of her Company and Assistance in my Age, being so very infirm, and unable to help my self or manage my Family, occasion'd it: I know you love  
her

her sincerely, and I cannot put her into better Hands. I beg you to respect her for my sake as well as her own : Look on her as the Gift of a dying Friend, who dearly loved and respected you in his Life-time. Let me see you join Hands ; and may she be ever as dear to you after, as before Marriage, by continuing to deserve your Affection, and never give you any Cause to repent of the Honour you have done her in the Choice you have made of her ; I beseech God to heap his Blessings upon you. And my dear Child, *said he to his Daughter*, I give you mine, but with this Charge, that you continue to deserve it by your Virtue, and dutiful Love and Fidelity to Monsieur *des Ronais*, your Husband : Return Thanks to God, that has given you such an honest Man, and continue to love and respect him as you ought ; he might have pretended to a richer and more noble Wife ; and therefore make up to him what is wanting in you, by that Submission and Tenderness which a good Wife ought to shew to her Husband. These are the Conditions on which I bless you. Then addressing himself to me : Tell my Confessor, *said he*, my Desire is, That you may be married immediately in my Chamber. I have now done with the World, and shall die content, if I can but see you both happily united before I expire. Make haste, lest I be deprived of this Satisfaction ; my Spirits decay much, I cannot last three Hours longer, be quick. He was doubtless sensible of his Death, which we did not apprehend so near. I was glad of this favourable Disposition that



I found him in, nor imagin'd him dying, his Voice and Senses were strong, his Eyes look'd bright and lively, and he spoke like a Man in perfect health. I could not but admire the Tranquillity of his Mind, he comforted his Daughter, who was drown'd in Tears, in a manner so serene and moving, that it touch'd me to the very Soul; nay he died like a Stoick, and not a Word or Sigh escaped from him that shew'd the least impatience, or unwillingness to die. I spoke to his Confessor in his Presence and he avouched all I said. The Priest told us, The time was very improper, and that he could not marry us without Leave from the Archbishop of *Paris*, which he doubted not to obtain since Monsieur *du Puis* desired it. We beg'd him to go immediately about it. So he took our Christian-Names and Qualities, and leaving another Priest to attend Monsieur *du Puis*, went to procure a Licence from the Archbishop. We remain'd in the Chamber, where I beheld in a dying Man that true and sincere Resignation and intire Disengagement from the World that becomes a true Christian in Death; in fine, such a temper of Mind as I desire to have on the same Occasion. He recited to us some Verses he had made on the Subject of Death some time before, intitl'd,

D

*Du*

## Du Puis's Sentiments of DEATH.

*I* Will not be long ere Death my Eyes shall  
close,

And I the glorious Sun no more shall see ;  
But, from the Miseries of Life set free,  
Amongst the Dead shall find a blest Repose :  
Then shall I be no more oblig'd to bear  
The Soul's and headstrong Passion's cruel War.

A wish'd-for Death, shall all my Troubles end,  
Which numerous as the Hours of Life have been.  
Each Day in the tumultuous busy Scene,  
Has new Misfortunes brought, and Fate did send  
To me fresh Trials ; but kind Death shall come  
And gently lay me in the silent Tomb.

Death is no Ill : Unmov'd I'll leave the Earth,  
And for my Change, as a wise Man, prepare ;  
To Nature's Laws submit as void of Fear  
As when my tender Mother gave me Birth ;  
Freely as I receiv'd it, Life resign,  
As only lent me by the Power Divine.

Mortals, who now are entering on Life's Stage,  
I envy not your Lot ; for did you know  
The Pains and Troubles you must undergo,  
You wou'd, like me, ne'er wish to see old Age :  
Had I before that I was born, but been  
Put to my choice, the Sun I had not seen.

Each

*Each Day to various Ills expos'd we are,  
Our sickly Body's to Corruptions born,  
Our Mind's with every Contradiction torn  
By raging Passions vex'd, and racking Care.  
This is the sad Condition of Mankind,  
And 'tis in Death alone we Rest can find.*

*From all these Evils Death shall set me free,  
Into his icy Arms with Joy I'll fly,  
No idle Fears my Soul shall terrify,  
Nor will I quit the World unwillingly:  
In my Creator's Mercy I'll confide,  
And hope with him I shall in Peace reside.*

I was so pleas'd with these Verses that I writ them down. He then return'd to his Prayers, and in some few Minutes after, in a very composed manner, expired in my Arms. I melted into Tears at this moving sight, and heartily join'd with his Daughter, whose Grief was sincere and very violent, in bewailing his Death. The Priest arriv'd not with the Licence till he was dead, but then decency oblig'd us to delay marrying for some time. I was forced to be civil to this Priest; but I never loved him heartily afterwards, for he was indeed the cause of all the Misfortunes that have since befallen me; for he was on this Occasion too scrupulous, and might have comply'd with the Request of a dying Man, without fearing to be censured by his Bishop; but there are too many such rigid Bigots, as well as those who are too negligent of their Duty. Yet I suspect that the faithless *Manon*

had engaged him to refuse me, and was constrain'd by her Father's Presence from declaring her Reasons, and so was glad of this Pretence to conceal the base Design she had already form'd to leave me ; yet I suspected her not, but believed her sincere, and that she would keep her word with me so soon as decency permitted. She appear'd extremely concern'd for her Father ; and I did all I was able to comfort her : I persuaded her to go home to my House which I now live in, and had taken some time before, on my Quarrel with *Madam de Ricoux* about the young Woman I had got with Child. Hither I brought *Madam du Puis* and *Madam Grandet*, who was then a Widow ; and *Madam de Contamine* came and kept her Company, whilst I return'd to her House to take care of her Affairs, having left *Madam du Puis*, and her Son, *Monsieur du Puis*, Sister-in-law, and Nephew, and several others his Relations there, who all respected and look'd on me as the Master of the House, and permitted me to act as such. *Madam du Puis* had given me the Keys of all ; I took care of every thing, and two Days after, had *Monsieur du Puis's* Will open'd and read in the Presence of his Relations: I gave Orders for his Funeral, for Prayers, and all things requisite for the Occasion, and took an Inventory of all. The faithless Maid permitted me to do every thing I desired, and sign'd all that I thought proper, and refused to do any thing that I thought otherwise, nor did I give her the least Occasion to repent of the Confidence she reposed in me. Her Father  
left



left her no Debts to pay, and had made her his sole Heir and Executrix ; so that she had no Person to dispute any thing with her ; all the Family loved and respected her, and she took full Possession of all. And after all was done, and the House in order, I carried her back thither ; but she was grown so weak, and cast down with Grief, that I did not dare press her as yet to marry : Madam *du Puis* her Aunt, and others, persuaded me to delay it a-while, and pleaded, That the world would censure her for marrying so soon after her Father's Death, and many other Pretences they made to defer it. I often press'd her in private to consent, but she (who only sought to gain time to effect her base Design) still delaid me. I was very much vex'd ; but having never been used to contradict her Will in any thing, I would not now constrain her. And now some Affairs in *Angoumois* required my Presence there, I knew I shou'd be kept at least a Month before I could end my Business, and my Journey would take up at least a Fortnight more ; which would complete the time she propos'd to stay before we marry'd. Her Aunt invited her to come and stay at her House till I return'd ; which I agreed to, hoping the Company she would see there, would divert and draw her insensibly out of the deep melancholy she seem'd seiz'd withal. She went thither before my Departure, and I took my leave of her there. The Night before I set out for *Angoumois*, I found her writing some Letters, which she finished and sent to the

Post-house in my presence, but I never look'd on them, or inquir'd to whom she writ, because I knew she had a great many Friends and Business to send about, to her Tenants, Steward, and others, part of her Estate lying in *Provence*; yet I observed there was one Letter which she seem'd to cover the Direction of with another, as I enter'd the Chamber. This was enough to raise a Jealousy in a Lover's Breast; yet I took not the Liberty I might, to ask her to see it; I only let my Glove fall, and in taking it up laid my other Hand on the Table on the upper Letter, and read the Name of *Gauthier*, without seeing to what Town or City it was directed; but never having heard of such a Name, I consider'd it no farther. I took leave with all the passionate Assurances of Affection possible, and went on my Journey, she having promised me to marry so soon as I came back. I was so impatient and transported with this Prospect of approaching Happiness, that I rather chose to give away part of my Right than to stay from her, and finished my Law-suit so expeditiously, that I return'd to *Paris* fifteen Days sooner than she expected me. I went directly to *Madam du Puis* her Aunt's, to see her, and never went into my own House tho' I pass'd by the Door: She was gone abroad, her Woman desir'd me to sit down in the Parlor whilst she went to see for her. At this instant the Postman brought two Packets of Letters for *Madam Manon*; the Maid gave them to me; I knew she would not be displeas'd if I should open them, so I broke up the Seal of one of  
the

the Letters ; but who can conceive the Rage and Despair that seiz'd my Soul at the reading it ! I first look'd at the Name, and found it *Gauthier* ; then I call'd to mind the former Letter she had endeavour'd to conceal from me. I read it in the utmost Distraction, and here is a Copy of it which I will read to you.

The LETTER.

Mademoiselle,

*T*Was with the extremest Transport that I received yours of the 14th, by which you inform'd me of the good News, That you are no longer under the tyranny of a Father. I have a thousand times admired the Complaisance and Patience that you supported his ill Humours withal, nor could I have imagin'd that filial Piety could extend so far as to perform the unpleasant Offices and Services you did him in his Illness ; but now I bless God you are at liberty, for which I will be thankful to Providence all my Life, on your account as well as my own. I am obliged to stay but a little while longer in this Place, and in fifteen Days at farthest, I hope to taste in your dear Company, all the transporting Pleasures that a happy Lover can enjoy, who has fortunately surmounted all Difficulty, and got the better of a Rival, supported and favour'd by the Man on whom you had your Dependance. Let this Rival be as formidable as he will, I swear his Death so soon as I arrive, if he opposes my Happiness, or else mine shall free me from the Torments of seeing you in the

*Arms of another. And since you consent to be mine, nothing but Death shall prevent me from being yours ; and I will prove to the World, that no Man was ever more passionately in love, or more faithful to his Mistress than*

GAUTHIER.

Grenoble, June the 18th,

Now tell me, my Friend, *continu'd Monsieur des Ronais*, what would you have done in my place : Could Grief extinguish Life, I had surely died that Moment on the spot. I remain'd some time stupid ; so unexpected a Blow struck me almost senseless. At last Rage awaked me, and I left the Place in a fury, and went to my own House ; there, being undress'd, I sat down in my Chamber, and being deaf to all but my Resentments, I writ her a Letter full of the bitterest Reproaches ; and the Transport I was in was such, that I knew not what I said or did. I was resolved to prevent this Man who was so positive of killing me before he had seen me, and to go to *Grenoble* that Hour and find him out, to see whether he was such a terrible Rival as he pretended to be. After taking this Copy of the Letter, I sent the Original with the rest unopen'd, with my Letter, to my faithless Mistress ; after which I immediately took Horse and went Post, to find out this *Gauthier*. Rage lent me Wings, I was but thirty Hours in going to *Grenoble*, and never stopt in the way to rest : I had the whole Place search'd to find out this Man, but could get no news of



of him. At last, finding all my Inquiries were vain I grew tired, and crossing the *Lionnis* and the Forest, I went to *Angoulesme*, fully resolved to stay there till I had, if possible, forgot my faithless *Manon*, and wore off my foolish Passion for her. Four Months I staid in that Place, but could no longer, because my Employ obliged me to return to *Paris*, where I have now been about three Months, and am still as much in love with her, and as much enraged against her as ever.

She came to my House to see me the next Day after I arrived, but I was deny'd to her, and forbid my Servants ever to tell her I was at home, if she came again. She writ to me, but I sent back her Letters unopen'd, with her Picture, and some other little Presents which I had received from her Hands, which I would rather have parted with my Life than have lost, before this Injury. Since this, her Cousin *du Pont*, and several of her Friends, have endeavour'd to reconcile us; but I am resolved to be deaf to all, the Crime is too plain, and I desire never to hear any more of her. She has not sent me back any thing I gave her, nor do I ask any thing of her, but only that she will no more trouble me. She is not yet marry'd, tho two Gentlemen of great Worth and Fortune have courted her; as for her unknown Lover *Gauthier*, I suppose he is afraid to appear. I shall endeavour to hate and despise her, and I know not what she can say to you, that makes her desire to see you; for I am certain it is impossible for her to justify herself. I have told you nothing but the

D 5

Truth,

Truth, and I beg that you would tell her, I am quite indifferent to all she does and says; tho to confess the truth to you, I have still so great a Passion for her, that I have much ado to constrain my self from going to her; nay I could even pardon her Crime were she penitent, did not Shame and sense of Honour deter me from it. If *Madam du Puis*, said *des Frans*, is guilty of this Crime, you do well to fly her, and she merits to be hated; but if you are under some fatal Mistake, as I fear you are, Ought you not to give her a Hearing? and will you not blush to be convinc'd of your Folly? You own you could never discover this imaginary Rival. The whole appears improbable; she would never dare, were she guilty of what you imagine, to attempt to clear herself in this manner: There must be some Mistake, or else she is the most deceitful and shameless Woman in the World, since *Silvia* is dead.

I have often had these Thoughts, said *des Ronais*, and must confess that I know not how to reconcile the Circumstances and Letter: I desire you, when you see her, if the Discourse falls on me, as it doubtless will, endeavour to find out the truth. She met me yesterday, and gave me such a Look as has almost disarm'd my Rage; and I fear to see her my self. Well, said *des Frans*, I promised her Cousin to visit her to-morrow; but 'tis but five a-clock, and I will this Night try to put you out of pain: I have nothing to do at present, and if you'll give me leave I'll go thither now, and at my return to Supper I'll bring you  
certain

certain News : I will stay no longer than is necessary to hear what she has to say, for to deal freely I have need of rest, having had none these two Nights past, which I spent in Merriment at Monsieur du Jussy's Wedding, nor am I recover'd from the Fatigue of my Journey. Monsieur des Ronais would not permit him to go out that Evening, but deferred his Satisfaction to the next Day ; when Monsieur des Frans first paid a Visit to his Uncles, who were return'd to Paris, and received him kindly. He told them he would settle in Paris ; desiring them to assist him with their Interest, to get him an Employment there ; and then made his next Visit, after Dinner, to his Friend's Mistress. After great Compliments on all sides, the beautiful Madam du Puis ask'd him many Questions about his own Adventures abroad. At last she concluded with saying, You were very fortunate to meet with Monsieur des Ronais, your darling Friend, at your arrival here ; he is too sincere in his Friendship not to still retain the most lively Sense of that, which he contracted with you in your Infancy. I wish, said des Frans, I could manifest the Respect I have for him, by doing him some singular Service. You may do him the greatest in the World, said she, by bringing him to his right Senses again, for he has for some time lost them. I have not as yet perceived it, said des Frans, tho he has related to me the Difference between you and him. Indeed I pity'd him, said she, at first, and would have undeceiv'd him ; nay I condescended more than became my Sex, and went

to visit him, tho he was so uncivil to refuse to see me: I after writ to him, nay he has often past by me rudely, and refus'd to look on me; he has even forgot to pay me the respect due to my Sex; and all this for a Letter which did not in the least concern me; he deserves my hatred, yet I am so generous to pity his Extravagancies, and wish his Recovery. I confess I still love him, and have such a regard to the Promises I have made him, that I have refused several advantageous Offers, and shall always look on him as the Person who ought to be my Husband, both by the Commands of a dying Father, and my own Choice, for I never lov'd but him. *Here she wept.* I cannot yet conquer the Tenderness I have for him, *contin'd she*, tho all my Friends blame me: You, Sir, are I am certain his true Friend; for pity's sake help to bring him to Reason, I am weary of tormenting my self and him to no purpose; persuade him but to give me a Hearing, and if I do not clear my self, look on me as the worst of Women: I am determin'd, if he will but permit me once to see him, that if he no longer loves me, and will not then vindicate my Honour by marrying me, as he ought to do, I will retire into a Convent the next Day: But I hope he hates me not, and doubt not our Reconciliation if he once gives me the favour of a Hearing, and to convince you how much I still love him, I will shew you the impertinent Letter he sent me, which no person but I, would ever pardon; but I consider it was writ in the heat of Passion.

*Here*



## French LOVERS. 61

Here she fetch'd the Letter he sent her the Night he set out for *Grenoble*, which contain'd these Words.

### The LETTER.

Madam,

**A**N Accident has just now discover'd your base falshood to me : I here send you back your dear Lover's Letter, to whom I am going to carry my Answer to that part of it which relates to me. You have, no doubt, told him I am a Coward, since he seems so confident of killing me, whom he never yet saw. I am resolv'd to see this mighty Hero, who shall take my Life or I will end his : You do not merit that I should eithen fight or die for you, but I will revenge my Injuries the noblest Way; first on him, with my Sword; and next on you, by looking on you as the worst of Women. Farewel. Fate will do me right I doubt not, and furnish you a Husband false as your self. I have here sent you back all the Trifles I received from you, I do from this Moment cancel all the Promises between us, I will burn your Letters, your fertile Mind can supply a score of Lovers with tender Epistles; and since your Soul is deceitful, I no more value them nor you. Adieu. Cruel, ungrateful, deceitful Manon.

Adieu for ever.

I have never shewn this Letter, said she, but to my Aunt and Cousins : I still respect him as my Husband, and am ready to forgive all

all if he now comes to me and hears me, if he refuses me this time it shall be the last Offer I will make him, and so I beg you to tell him. *But, said des Frans, first inform me of this fatal Secret : The Letter be open'd, Did it not belong to you ? Who was this Gauthier ? The Contents so exactly agreed with your Circumstances, that my Friend is not so much to blame as you would intimate.* It is true, said *she*, the Letter was directed to me, but was writ to another ; and if he will give me leave he shall to morrow see the Gentleman who writ it, and the Lady to whom it was written, who are now Man and Wife, at this instant in *Paris* : *Monfieur de Terney* was the *Gauthier* that writ it to his Lady, whom I will to morrow invite to Dinner ; bring *Monfieur des Ronais*, and he shall be convinced that I was only the Confident of their Amour, and had no Share in the Matter : Do but persuade him to come, and I am positive we shall part Friends. *And if he comes not, said des Frans, he and I will be Enemies, or else we will put him into a Mad-house.* No, said *she* laughing, we'll confine him in the Chains of Wedlock, which he was once as mad for : Here, carry him back my Picture and his Letter, and tell him, I say he was a Fool to send them to me ; and that I will keep every thing that was his whilst I live, in respect to him as a Husband, whom I dearly loved. *I see, said des Frans, your Reconciliation is in great Forwardness ; he confess'd to me yesterday, that he loved you as much as ever, and fear'd to see you lest he should discover it : I will this night undeceive him,*

him, and to-morrow will bring you together, and then I believe you'll need no Arbitrator to end your Quarrel. At this instant a Lady came in to visit Madam du Puis, magnificently dress'd ; *des Frans* rose to take leave, but the strange Lady desired him to stay. You have forgot this Lady sure, said Madam du Puis. I ask the Lady's Pardon, said he, I have some Idea of her Face, but cannot recollect who she is. I do not wonder at it, said the Lady, I made so little a Figure in the World six years ago, that few of my Friends took notice of me ; but to refresh your Memory, my Name is *Angelique*, and I lived with Madam du Puis's Mother, and the Lady who was Maid of-Honour to the Princess of *Cologne* ; but I am at present, I bless God, the Wife of Monsieur de *Contamine*. Ah ! Madam, said *des Frans*, is it possible ! Yes, Sir, said she, 'tis no Secret, I shall never forget what I was, nor the vast Obligations I have to Madam du Puis, part of which you already know ; but the Things she has done for me since you left *France*, are such as I can never cease to thank her for and acknowledge, of which she will inform you hereafter. You owe me nothing, said the charming du Puis, 'tis to your own Merit that you owe your good Fortune. It is a very surprizing piece of News, said *des Frans*, and I congratulate you, Madam, and am extremely glad to see *Virtue and Beauty* advanced to *Happiness*. Go, said Madam du Puis, haste to my distracted Hero, he will tell you all her Story, 'tis worth your hearing I assure you, nor will she be dis-

pleased,

pleased, she is a Friend to you both I promise you : Tell him she enjoins him to entertain you with her History, which is much to her Advantage. I wish, *said the Lady*, he would suffer himself to be inform'd of his own as perfectly as he is of my Affairs : If you love him, try to convince him of his Error ; tell him I have done what I can to serve him, tho in vain. Then Madam *du Puis* told her what had past between her and *des Frans*. Bring him to-morrow, *said the Lady*, Monsieur *de Contamine* and Madam the Princess of *Cologne* will be at *St. Germain*s all day to-morrow, and I will invite my self here to Dinner : I will lay a Wager that we will make the Wretch as humble to his Mistress, as a Novice in a Convent before his Provincial. *Des Frans* vow'd he would not fail to bring him, and so took leave.

*Des Roneis*, who waited his return with impatience, no sooner saw him but he cried, Do you bring me any good News ? No, said *des Frans* laughing, *but I am to quarrel with you on account of your Mistress, who is altogether innocent of the Letter you are so enraged at : Madam Contamine and she, bid me tell you, you deserve all you have suffer'd, since you have, like a mad Man, refus'd to be cured. To be serious, You are a fortunate Man, your Mistress loves, and is ready to keep your Promise with you ; here I bring you back your uncivil Letter and her Picture.* In fine, he told him all he had learn'd from Madam *du Puis*, and of the Promise he had made her to bring him to Dinner with him  
the



the next Day : *Where*, said he, *the pretended Gauthier will be, that is, Monsieur de Terny, who made use of his Valet de Chamber's Name, in writing to his Lady ; the Reasons of which they will then inform you of. If you refuse to hear your Mistress's Justification this time, she resolves to quit the World and you for ever, and to go die in a Convent.* Alas ! said *des Ronais*, if this be true, I am the most criminal Man, and she the most generous Woman on Earth : But I will gladly accept her Offer, and go with you ; and if she proves what you aver she will, I will kneel at her Feet, and ask Pardon for my Follies before you all. Well, said *des Frans*, I have Orders from her and *Madam de Contamine*, to tell you, That they enjoin you to relate to me *Madam de Contamine's History of her Amours and Marriage with her Husband ; and I am very impatient to know how that young Woman, who was Waiting-maid to your Mistress, came to this Greatness.* You are not the only Person, said *des Ronais*, who have wonder'd at it, for it was the talk of all *Paris* ; nay, what will surprize you more is, that she marry'd *Monsieur de Contamine* with his Mother's Consent, who is one of the proudest Ladys in *France*, and expected her Son should marry one of the best Fortunes in the Kingdom, yet this young Woman's Virtue overcame and gain'd her. But before I enter on this Story, I must tell you, *Monsieur de Jussy* has been here to see for you, but could not stay till you came : I waited on him to his Coach, where I had a Sight of his


his Bridge, who is, in my opinion, a very charming Woman, and I am very desirous to know their Story. *You shall know it another time*, said *des Frans*, *I will tell it Madam du Puis and her Cousin, and Madam de Contamine, and you, together; because I am sure they will be glad to know it, and they will be of Use to reconcile Madam de Mongay and Monsieur de Jussy.* 'Tis well thought on, said *des Ronais*, she accuses him of having dealt unfairly, and seems very angry. *You shall know the Reason of it*, said *des Frans*, *we will if you please go to-morrow and see Monsieur de Jussy and his Lady, and then you shall know all; but this Evening you must oblige me with Madam de Contamine's History.*



The



*The HISTORY of Monsieur  
de Contamine and Angelique,  
the GENEROUS LOVER  
and VIRTUOUS MAID.*

 Hat you may be perfectly acquainted with this Story, *said* des Ro-  
nais, 'tis fit that I tell you first,  
Monsieur *des Contamine's* Circum-  
stances before his Marriage with  
*Angelique*, who you know was only a Servant:  
He is the only Son of a great Lawyer who  
was nobly born, and had a handsom paternal  
Estate, besides which he had great Employ-  
ments, and by that means had most immense  
Riches, a Man of a great Character and  
Fortune ; he marry'd the Daughter of a rich  
Citizen in *Paris*, who was an only Child, and  
inherited all her Father's Fortune, which was  
very considerable : By her he had this Son,  
Monsieur *de Contamine*. The Father died and  
left her a young Widow, and tho she has had  
many great Offers, and such as had Coronets  
on their Coaches, yet she has refus'd them all,  
and dedicated all her Thoughts to educate  
her Son, who was but six Years old when  
Monsieur

Monsieur *de Contamine* died. Her whole Aim having bred her Son up with all the care and Accomplishments possible, was to match him advantageously, and therefore 'tis an amazing thing that she should consent to his marrying so mean a Person as *Angelique*, and is now so fond of her that she lets her live with her, never can bear her long out of her sight, and declares in publick, that she knows not which she loves best, her or her Son. Monsieur *de Contamine* is a handsome black Man, and a Man of excellent Parts, a Person of Honour, a good Christian, and an incomparable Husband. *Angelique's* Father was a Gentleman of *Anjou*, a younger Brother of a good Family, who being born to no Estate was bred to the Sword; he was a Cornet of Horse in the same Regiment where Monsieur *du Puis* was Lieutenant Colonel; he marry'd a young Lady of *Anjou* who had no Fortune, by whom he had the fair *Angelique*. This Gentleman was so unfortunate as to engage himself in the Rebellion with the Marechal *de Hocquincourt*, against the King, in which he was kill'd, and left his Widow in a very low Condition, with poor *Angelique*, who was then but seven Years old. Monsieur *du Puis* made his Wife take this Child, which the Mother was unable to keep, and Madam *du Puis* bred it up as her own, with Madam *Manon*. At Madam *du Puis's* death *Angelique* was fourteen; Monsieur *du Puis*, weary of the Expence, would have persuaded her to go into the Monastery where his Daughter was, offering to provide for her then, if she would be a Nun; but

one



one of Madam *du Puis's* Friend's, who was going to place her Daughter as a Maid of Honour to the Princess of *Cologne*, desired Monsieur *du Puis* to let her have *Angelique* to wait of her: He readily comply'd, and she went to live with Madam *de Vougy*, who was about the same Age as she was: I need not tell you, that tho *Angelique* was but little of Stature, yet she was a compleat Beauty; and what she wanted of the awful Mein and Statefulness of a tall Lady she supplied in a Sweetness and an Air so engaging, that she charm'd all that saw her, but you already know her; she is extremely witty, has an excellent Memory, and has read much; she sings divinely, dances, and paints in Miniature; she is wise, and, in fine, a most virtuous, and most accomplish'd Woman. *Contamine* offer'd her all that could tempt a Woman, to ruin her; but was forced to marry her. Nor is she less deserving her good Fortune by the Use she makes of it; for she is generous, charitable, pious, neither censorious, nor proud. While she waited on Madam *de Vougy*, who learn'd to dance, sing, play on the Musick, and speak Languages, she attain'd to be Mistress of all these Accomplishments, profiting more than her Lady, by hearing her, instructed; and by that Means alone attain'd to speak *Italian*, and to understand Musick in perfection. Madam *de Vougy* went to Madam *de Contamine's*, on the behalf of a Relation who was at Law, and desir'd Monsieur *de Contamine's* Assistance and Interest with his Mother, whose Relation was the Defendant, and had wrong'd the

the Plaintiff, by defrauding him of a piece of Land which join'd to a Field of his, a part of which he had encroach'd to himself wrongfully, to make a Path-way to his House, and vexatiously treated him, who was but a poor Gentleman, and the other was a rich Farmer, and Tenant to *Madam de Contamine* : To avoid farther Trouble and Expence, the Plaintiff writ to *Madam de Vougy* to represent the matter to that Lady, who with one Line to the Farmer, could end the Dispute. *Angelique* waited on her thither : *Contamine* no sooner saw her, but he fell in love with her, but had at that time no Opportunity to speak to her. He promised to speak to his Mother to write to the Farmer, and inform herself of his Reasons for what he had done : In fine, he study'd how to prolong the Affair, on purpose to make *Madam de Vougy* continue her Visits, which she often repeated, always bringing *Angelique* with her ; so that he became so much in love with her, that he could live no longer in silence. And waiting an Opportunity, one Day when she was left by her Lady in the Antichamber, whilst she was with *Madam de Contamine* in her Closet, he came in, and going up to her said, There is nothing more pleasing to me, fair Creature, than to see you here so often. You are very unkind, Sir, said she, to oblige my Lady to come so many times to obtain a Favour you might so easily procure her ; and were I in her place, I should not act so much below my Character. Perhaps, said he, pleased at the greatness of her Spirit, some other Person has more Interest in my Heart

Heart than your Lady, whom I would not deny any thing to ; and 'tis for their Sakes I keep her in suspense, that I may have the Pleasure of seeing them. At these Words she blush'd : Then, Sir, *said she*, it is your place to wait on her, or them, at her own Apartment in the Palace, and not oblige her to follow you. Suppose I should visit you there, *said he*, will you be willing ? No, Sir, *said she*, Visits from a Man of your Fortune and Quality to me, would be prejudicial to both ; for it would blast my Reputation, and demean you ; and I would not admit of it on any Terms. Then, *said he*, I will make your Lady continue her Visits hither, for I cannot live without seeing you. Sir, *said she*, do not rally me thus ; tho Fortune has placed me in a Sphere below my Birth, and below your notice, yet I do not use to be insulted or made a Jest of. By my Soul, *said he*, I adore you, and love you beyond all Women ; and to convince you, tell me but a way by which I may continue to be blest with the Sight of you, and I will this Day procure your Lady the Favour she desires, and end her Sollicitations here. To try you, Sir, *said she*, and serve my Lady, bring the Order from your Mother to the Farmer, that we desire, this Day to the Palace to my Lady, and the Obligation will engage her, if you desire it, to admit of your visiting her there, where you will not miss of seeing me. But, alas ! *said he*, I cannot speak to you. Here, *said she*, you never shall do it more ; for I am now so terrify'd, least some body should make Observations on our Conversation, that

that I resolve never to repeat it ; but in my Lady's Apartment I give you leave to use any Opportunities you can find, to talk with me. Ah ! *said he*, you only desire to get your Ends, and promise me nothing : If I oblige you, what will you promise in return ? What do you ask ? *said she*. Only, *said he with a very serious Air*, that you believe me when I tell you that I passionately love you. At these words her Lady and Madam *de Contamine*, enter'd the Room, and taking leave, her Lady carry'd her away with her. But from this Moment *Angelique*, who perceiv'd he was in earnest, conceived great hopes of being advanced in the World. Her Lady had receiv'd a flat Denial from Madam *de Contamine*, and was so vex'd that she said she would go there no more. But the Lover kept his word, and the next day brought the Order he promised. Having got Information that Madam *de Vougy* was gone forth with the Princess ; he went into the Apartment, and found *Angelique* in her Lady's Chamber at work, all alone, according to his Wishes : See, *said he*, I have kept my word, fail not to keep yours ; for your sake I have obliged your Lady, and 'tis only with design to see you, that I shall visit her : Let me not lose this happy Opportunity, but let me improve it, to convince you to what a degree I love you, and tell me ingenuously what I am to expect from your Goodness. She turn'd his Discourse for awhile into Rallery, seeming not to believe him, and urging the Inequality there was between them, but to no purpose ; till at last, finding him

persist



persist, and grow angry, she became serious and said, If you do really love me, Sir, what is your Design in it? To love you always, *said he*, and to make you love me. But suppose I do not, *said she*, what will you do then? Be always wretched, *said he*, but never cease to love you. But should I love you in return, what Advantage would it be to us? *said she*. I would make you and my self happy, *said he*. Consider what I say, *she reply'd*, you are too great to marry me, and I am too great to comply with your Desires on any other Terms: I prefer the Condition I am in to an Empire with Infamy; therefore expect no Favour from me on dishonourable Terms: You desired me to answer you seriously, and I have done it. Yes, *said he*, you have indeed; but I did not expect it so positive: As to marrying of you, the whole World would blame me if I marry'd a young Woman in the Station you are. I know, *said she, interrupting him briskly*, that I am but a Servant, you need not re-mind me of it; but I will rather chuse to continue such all my life, than change that Station for an infamous Greatness: You are not the only Person; greater than you have made me such Offers, but my Soul, and my Confessor, have always assur'd me that Poverty was no Shame, and that before God and Man a poor virtuous Maid was more valuable and better esteem'd than a rich Courtezan: I do not desire you to marry me, but I tell you what you are to expect; I know 'tis altogether unfit for you to match with me, and therefore request you from this Hour to im-

E

portune

fortune me no more, but to leave me at quiet: You may wait for my Lady, or go away with your Paper, as you think fit, I shall withdraw and leave you at liberty. At these words she was going out of the Room, but he held her, crying, Stay, my dear *Angelique*, you have heard but half what I had to say to you. I have heard more than I ought, *said she*, and I will hear no more. She broke from him at these words, and Servants entering the other Rooms, he was forced to go away without seeing her Lady. He knew not what Course to take; he could neither think of marrying, or leaving her. She also, who was now more convinced of his Love than before, resolved to push her Fortune, hoping in time to gain him to marry her, and determin'd to treat him with so much Respect and Reserve, that he should not be disoblig'd or embolden'd to hope to gain his Ends by any other Way. She acquainted her Lady at her return home, that he had been there to see her, but not with his Business, for fear he should have changed his mind and destroy'd the Order he had brought. He return'd the next Day at the same Hour, when her Lady was absent as before: *Angelique* seeing him coming into the Chamber, rose up, and with great modesty making a low Courtesy, when out at another Door, and calling another young Woman, return'd with her along with her. She told him with great respect, that she had inform'd her Lady that he had been there: Sir, *said she*, I did not tell her of any particular business that you came about; but had not the

Princess requir'd her Attendance, she would have saved you this Trouble by going to your House, but I suppose she will be there this Evening before she returns home, for it will be late: She is gone to *Luxembourg*, and 'tis in vain for you to stay for her. He drew her by the Hand towards the Window, out of the hearing of her Companion, who in good-manners kept back. Should I stay, *said he*, would you be so good to keep me Company. *Sir, said she*, my Company is tiresome, we know one another's Minds already. He sat down some time, talking aloud of things indifferent; but finding the young Woman did not quit the Room, and that he should get no Opportunity of speaking to *Angelique* alone, he civilly took leave: She waited of him to the Door, when parting he whisper'd with a deep Sigh, Cruel *Angelique*. She made him no Answer but a low Curtesy.

*Madam de Vougy* went to his House that Evening, but he was not at home: *Madam de Contamine* inform'd her that she had, at her Son's Request, granted her Suit, and that he had been to wait of her twice with the Order to the Farmer. The next Day he went again to the Palace, and gave it her before *Angelique*. *Madam de Vougy* return'd him abundance of Thanks, saying she thought herself much oblig'd to him, that her Kinsman should gratefully acknowledge the Favour, which was intirely owing to him. He answer'd, That he had one Favour to ask, which he would esteem a sufficient Recompence for all the Services he could do her, which was

her Permission to let him visit her sometimes. She told him he should be always welcome. After some more Compliments he took leave, and in going forth would fain have clap'd a Letter into *Angelique's* Hand, which she seem'd not to see, and did not take, tho she saw and was transported to see him persevere in his Amour, and was pleas'd with the Service he had done her Lady, for her sake. He made another Visit there the next Day, and fail'd not to repeat them for a Month together, which made the world believe he was fallen in love with *Madam de Vougy*; and the Princess of *Cologne* took notice of it to her, and told her she thought it a very advantageous Offer, and greater than she could in reason expect, and the young Lady did not deny that she thought it so too; but that, as yet, he had not explain'd himself. The Princess offer'd to speak to him in her favour, but she beg'd her to defer it. *Madam de Vougy* was handsome, and being supported by the Princess, Monsieur de *Contamine* had been much embarrass'd had she propos'd this Match to him. *Angelique*, who had heard this News, was almost distracted, and so much alarm'd, that she no more refus'd to receive a Letter from him, which he secretly convey'd into her Hand the next Visit he made to her Lady. She took it trembling, and retiring into her Chamber read it; it contain'd these Words.

The



## The LETTER.

Charming *Angelique*,

**T**His is the sixth Letter I have writ to you, without the least Assurance of its being received by you ; I need not repeat to you that I love you, I flatter my self that you no longer doubt it ; I do not ask you to give credit to my Words, judge of me by my Actions ; I do not tell you that I am ready to marry you, you will not advise me to do it immediately, when you know the cruel Reasons that at present detain me from it ; neither do I tell you that I resolve against doing it, for it would be impossible for me to keep such a Resolution : The trouble of my Soul, on this Occasion, is inconceivable. I beg that you will immediately quit the servile way of living you are in, and retire from a place where you are known, to live Mistress by your self. Receive the Present I will make you, as your due, and as Marks of the great Respect I have for you, and I will not ask or require any Favour at your Hands, in return, but what your own Goodness and Virtue will allow me. Were we in some Country, any where where you were not known, I would not hesitate a Moment ; but you should be my Wife, if you would consent to make me so blest. But in Paris, tho your Beauty, and the Passion I have for you, makes me forget all the Inequality of our Condition, what Excuse could I make to my Friends for such an Action, should I marry you whilst a Servant ? Tho I am not able to say I will not, yet I beg

*you would prevent me from being the Subject of the world's laughter, by accepting the Offer I here make you. Grant me but one Hour's converse with you alone, and I shall convince you of the Necessity of what I propose. I wait your Answer, as the Sentence which will give me Life or Death, and can no longer live in suspense or without your Company,*

*Adieu.*

This Letter fill'd her with the most ambitious Hopes; but she resolv'd to conceal her Joy, and not to make any Advances, or grant him a private Meeting. He came every Day, but eight past ere he could find an Opportunity to speak to her alone, tho he watch'd her Lady's Absence. In this time, the Princess had let fall some Words that much alarm'd him, and his Countenance shew'd the Distraction of his Mind. At last he found her alone in the Apartment, at work : What have you resolv'd, my Angel ? *said he*, Is it your Design to drive me to despair ? Do you hope to augment my Passion, that is impossible ? determine your Fate and mine, and tell me what you would have me do. I would have you leave me in Repose, *said she*, I approve of your Reasons for not marrying me, and you cannot but approve of mine for not seeing you any more ; do not persist in persecuting me, you only lose your time, or will render me unhappy if I should grow so credulous as to believe you sincere ; think of marrying my Lady, she likes you, and is your Equal. Heaven forbid, *said he* ; such a Thought

Thought never enter'd my Soul. The only way to convince me that that is not your Design, *said she*, is never to repeat your Visits here. 'Tis enough, *said he*, your Commands are absolute and shall be obey'd. But charming *Angelique*, *said he*, *throwing himself at her Feet and embracing her Knees*, I cannot live without seeing and conversing with you. You can write, *said she*, I will not refuse to receive your Letters. But you will continue, *said he*, in a Condition which forbids me to make the honourable Pretensions I could boldly make you, in that which I would place you in; quit it, I conjure you, by all your Hopes of Happiness in this World and the next; I have a Fortune to maintain you elsewhere more nobly, and more suitable to your Birth and my Designs; I cannot bear to see you in a Station so unbecoming you and me: Go and live with your Mother, be Mistress of your self, I will furnish what shall support you both handsomly; my Visits to you there will be less observed, and not blemish your Reputation or mine; your Lady will soon learn my Business here, and thro' Jealousy and Revenge blast and discard you: I will come to see you at your Mother's no oftener than you will give me leave. Here, should I write to you, who shall bring me your Answers, or is fit to be trusted with the Secret of my Love to you? In a Lodging, in some private Street, where neither you nor your Mother are known, you may by the change of Habit pass unknown: In some time I may present you to my Mother, as a young Lady of good Birth, tho no

great Fortune, and she having forgot your Face may consent to my Choice : Consult your Mother. I ask nothing of you injurious to your Virtue, nor any return for any thing I shall do for you but your Acceptance, and the Pleasure of seeing you live in a manner futing my Desires, and which may no longer constrain me to make a Secret of my Love : I am sure you would not be pleased to see me expose my self in the Circumstances you are now in of a Servant, yet if you will force me to it, it must be so ; I have shewn you a more noble way to make me yours. Sir, *said she*, I confess your Offers are great and honourable, nor can I consent you should, for my sake, be the Jest of the World, and Scorn of your noble Family ; but can I accept what you offer me with Honour ? Is it not in a manner selling my Reputation for your Satisfaction ? My Poverty is no secret, and when I am seen to live and go dress'd like a Woman of Fortune, Will not your Visits confirm the World in their Censures, and make them conclude me your Mistress ? and tho I will suppose you will be always constant and the same, contrary to the Custom of Mankind, yet as you are mortal have I not reason to fear that Death may put an End to your Life, and leave me destitute of your Assistance ? Your Family will then deprive me both of my good-name and whatever you shall leave me : Thus I shall be the most miserable Woman on Earth, tho really innocent ; blame me not then, if I rather chuse to continue what I am, than to venture to quit it on any other Terms but that of being your Wife.

Yes,



Yes, charming Maid, *said he, clasping her in his Arms*, you are wise as fair; I loved your Beauty before, but now I adore your Virtue and Wisdom, and I will now tell you my last Resolves. He would have proceeded, but was prevented by *Madam de Vougy's* entering the Room. He soon took leave, and went home resolved to write his Thoughts to *Angelique*, but he could not find an Opportunity to give her the Letter for three Days, in which he could not see her: At last he learn'd that she was gone to assist her Mother, who was dangerously ill, and in so poor Circumstances that she could not pay a Nurse to provide things necessary, without her Daughter's help. He had much ado to find out the House, but having discover'd it, he went thither in a Chair, which he left with his Servants at the End of the Street, which was a poor obscure place in the Suburbs of *Paris*.

*Angelique* was surpriz'd to the last degree when she saw him enter the House, and he was as much amazed to see the miserable Poverty of the Place, and in what manner her poor Mother lay, in a mean Bed, such as he had scarce ever seen. He went out again without saying one word, and as she concluded with design never to see her more. This Thought extremely shock'd her at first, but on reflection she thought otherwise. It was not above an Hour before he return'd: You are not in a Condition at present, my dear *Angelique*, *said he*, to talk, nor can I stay, I must leave you; but I shall not fail to return once a Day, to know how you do: Take care of

82 *The ILLUSTRIOUS*

your sick Mother, but do not impair your own Health, for I am too much concern'd for that to permit you to endanger it: I am much troubled to see you and her in a Place so unfit for you, and so little becoming the Person I adore. When I am gone take care that nobody looks into that Cupboard to wrong you; I shall see to-morrow if you have any value for me, till then *Adieu*. At these Words he went away, and she going to the Cupboard found a fine Purse full of Gold, and in it a Letter, which reading she found it contain'd words to this Purpose.

*You are not in a Condition, charming Angelique, to refuse the Help of those who are willing to assist your Mother: Her Circumstances engage me to take care both of her and you, the Presents I make you are for her Use, and I charge you, as you will answer it to God, not to refuse to accept and use them to procure means for her support and recovery; nor do I intend them as Obligations to you, but as Acts of Duty and Charity, and I shall be infinitely oblig'd to you for accepting anything from me: I send you a Bed, and other Furniture, with a little Plate for decency and use, to render your Abode more suitable to your Births, and more commodious to live in. Let me see the Face of the House more agreeable when I come next, and more fit to accommodate your sick Mother, whose recovery is sincerely wish'd by*

*Yours,*

*CONTAMINE.*

*Angeli-*

*Angelique* was never so perplex'd in her life as she was at the reading of this Letter, she was in great Necessity of all things fit to supply her Mother's Wants; here was a present Supply, yet it came from the Hands of a Man who made love to her, and whom she fear'd to lay herself under Obligations to, and she profess'd to *Mademoiselle du Puis* and me, that she was in so great a Dilemma that she believes she should not have accepted *Monsieur de Contamine's* Presents, had not a *Capuchine* who attended her Mother in her Sickness come in, and whom she acquainted with the whole Story of what had past between her and *Monsieur de Contamine*, under the Seal of Secrecy; upon which he assur'd her, she might with a safe Conscience accept whatever he gave her on the Terms propos'd in the Letter. I was, *said she*, extremely glad to find our Confessor's Opinion suited so well with mine, and that I had so wise and good a Man's Approbation. Nor did she fail to applaud her Lover's Proceedings, in her own Thoughts, and admire the noble and generous manner of his Behaviour. During their Discourse some Porters brought in a very genteel Bed, Chairs, Stools, fine Tapestry-Hangings, and Chest of Drawers, Cabinet, Looking-glass, and all other Furniture necessary to make the House decent, and such as would have become a far better Place. After which, a Goldsmith's Man brought in some Plate, as a Porringer, two Dishes, two Plates, Candlesticks and Snuffers, Saucepan, Cup and Spoons. *Angelique* gave Orders for the placing every thing, and

and in two Hours time the Face of the Place was so changed that it seem'd a little Palace. And the next Day, when Monsieur *de Contamine* came to visit them, he was much pleas'd, and thank'd her for accepting what he sent, as if it were the greatest Favour in the World. She return'd him the like in her Mother's Name, and ingenuously told him, she had consulted her Confessor before she received his magnificent Presents. He blamed her for being so scrupulous, and smiling said, *Angelique*, I never shall think you under any Obligation to me, till I change your Name ; yet you may immediately confer one on me, in granting me one Favour, which is, That you will take a Nurse to attend your Mother, watching is very unfit for one of so tender a Constitution as you are ; pray buy a little Bed for your self, to lie in this Closet alone, where you may sleep at quiet ; and then I shall be freed from the anxious Fears I have of your falling sick. You may imagine how much this Tenderness of his engaged her Heart, yet she seem'd to comply with repugnance. He staid some Hours, and beg'd leave to visit them every Day : to which she consented, on Condition that he should never let his Coach or Servants come to the Door ; but that he should come on foot, and in the Evening, when it was dark ; and that he should call her Mother Aunt, to prevent the Nurse's Suspicions ; to whom they would intimate, That he had some Employment that hinder'd him from coming till that time of the Day : Thus, said *Angelique*, she will imagine your Visits proceed  
from



from Duty, and conclude you a kind Relation, and that we have the Honour to be kin to you; and I hope you will behave your self so honourably, that no occasion for Scandal will be given. He agreed to all she desired, and visited them every Evening; and a Day did not pass, in which he did not send or bring her some Present, and the Nurse suspected nothing; but believed him their Kinsman. *Angelique's* Mother soon grew better, at which he seem'd as glad as if she had been his own, which still more engaged her to love him. He ask'd her if she could eat? The Nurse answer'd, she had eat part of a roasted Pullet the Night before. Well then, *said he*, my dear Aunt, we will dine together to-morrow; don't provide any thing, for I'll do that my self; and Cousin, *said he*, I'll be your Guest this once, tho you did not invite me. She was so surpriz'd and transported together, that she did not answer one word. The next Morning he sent her a Box fast lock'd, and about a quarter of an Hour after, the Key with a Letter, in which he desired her not to open it before the Nurse, but alone; which doing, she found a whole Set of Plate for the Side-board, with Knives, Forks, Salts, and all things for the Table, put up in Cotton. She was agreeably surpriz'd, and seeing a Letter stuck in the Lid of the Box, she open'd it and read to this Effect.

*I Am asham'd, my dear Cousin, to see your Table unprovided of Necessaries, and that your Nurse may not see any thing wanting when*

86      *The* ILLUSTRIOUS

*when she lays the Cloth, put what you find here into your own Chest of Drawers or Cup-board, as if you had them by you. I wait with impatience for Night : had I waited for an Invitation I had not had the Satisfaction of eating with you ; therefore inviting my self, I will make my self welcome, and shall think my self happy, if you approve of the Liberty I have taken.*

He fail'd not to come to Supper, bringing under a Cloke, in which he wrap'd himself, what he brought to eat, which was Fowls ; and a Porter soon after brought a Hamper with Wine, Lobsters, Tarts, and Sweetmeats : he came so soon as it was dusk ; and the Nurse roasted the Fowls, whilst he entertain'd the old Gentlewoman and her Daughter in the Chamber ; she was so well recover'd as to be up, and sit on her bedside : *Angelique* had inform'd her of all concerning him, and she was transported at her Daughter's good fortune. Never did any Man appear more gay and pleas'd than he did at this Supper ; showing that he was infinitely glad to eat this, the first Meal he had eaten in her company : So soon as the Mother was perfectly recover'd, he took a Pretext to send the Nurse into the City, and being alone with them thus address'd himself to *Angelique's* Mother : *Madam, said he,* I need not tell you that I love your Daughter, and that I design to make her my Wife, but cannot as yet do it, in respect to my Mother, whose tender care over me has engag'd me, beside the Duty I owe her, never to marry without her Consent ; therefore, in two words, I must  
tell

tell you, it is necessary that you change your manner of living, and remove to a better House and Place, and continue some time to live like Women of fashion, as you are by birth ; that her Face being forgot and Habit chang'd, my Mother may not remember her, but be persuaded she has never been in the low Station she has had the misfortune to be reduc'd to : So soon as all is ready, you may discharge your Nurse, who knows nothing of your Secrets, and take a Servant to do the Work, and a Chamber-maid to dress and wait of you both, with a Foot-boy to attend *Angelique* abroad. I will take care to furnish you with Money for Habits and Furniture ; and because we are all mortal, and Death may take me away, and then you will be unable to subsist any longer in this gentile manner, I have here brought you (*at these Words he pull'd three Parchment Writings out of his Pocket*) what will suffice to provide for you handsomly all the Days of your Lives ; here is a Revenue on the Town-house, which I have bought in *Angelique's* Name ; another in a publick Fund ; and in the third place, I make her a Present of a House which I have by the *Buffy Gate* : if I live to marry her, it will all return to me, and if I die I shall have the Comfort of knowing she is provided for. And that you may not, my dear *Angelique*, suspect that I have any dishonourable Designs upon your Virtue, I here make it my request to your Mother, never to leave us alone. Consult now your Heart, and if I am so unhappy that your Inclinations don't correspond with  
mine,

mine, and that after all this you do not consent to be mine without reluctance, and with pleasure, I will not constrain you, but will this Hour set you at liberty to make another choice ; since the Knowledge of your being happy will comfort me under the Misfortune of losing you, and I should die with grief, if after I had marry'd you, I should find that you were not as much pleas'd with your choice as I shall be with mine. *Angelique* was so overcome with this unexpected Generosity, she was not able to answer, but falling down at his Feet, shed a Flood of Tears and fainted. Is it possible, my Charmer, *said he*, lifting her up and kissing her Hands, you should have so lively a Sense of my Services, or do you deceive me ? No, *said she*, letting her Head fall on his Bosom, I love you : He clasped her in his Arms with such transport as words cannot express : but recovering her Reason, and confus'd with what she had done, she endeavour'd to get from him. Do not repent, my dear *Angelique*, *said he*, of the generous Confession you have made ; 'tis the first kind thing you have done, and I am more charm'd with the tender Disorder with which you disclos'd your Thoughts, than if you had declar'd them in the most expressive Terms. Tho, *said she*, I am quite confus'd at my own words, yet I do not repent that I have spoke a Truth to oblige the Man who has so highly oblig'd me, and so greatly merits my Esteem ; and I will henceforth do whatever you think fit, confident that you will never change, or ask any thing unfit for me to grant : I will receive your Presents.



sents to render my self more fit to be yours. And will you now promise me, *said he embracing her*, to be mine? Yes, *said she*, I will be your Wife. And I swear by all that's sacred, *said he*, to make you so the first moment it is in my Power: to confirm which, I beg you to accept of these as a Marriage-Gift to bind this Promise; then he tied a rich Pearl Necklace about her Neck, and put a wedding Ring set round with brilliant Diamonds on her wedding Finger; With these, *said he*, I bind you to be mine; and remember that I expect our Hearts should be more strongly united from this hour to one another, than these Trifles are to your Body. Then he desir'd her to take a Coach, and buy what Furniture and Clothes she lik'd; and so soon, *said he*, as your Clothes are made, and all is ready for you to remove, I will conduct you to your House, which I have thus dispos'd for your reception; first, it is situate in a Street next the Fields, and has a Garden and Back-door into them; I have placed a Gentleman, his Wife, and two Daughters in it on the ground Floor, who are very honest People, and my Creatures; all the rest is reserv'd for your use: this I did to prevent any Questions about your Name in the neighbourhood.

Having finish'd their Discourse he went away, and the next Day brought her more Money than was wanting: All things were in few Days accomplish'd; rich Furniture and Clothes were got: he brought her Laces, Linen, a fine Watch, and every thing proper to equip her like a Duchess: So he brought her  
and

and her Mother to the House, where the People receiv'd 'em as Ladies of great birth, and with such Respect as Monsieur *Contamine's* Behaviour to them, and the Obligations they had to him requir'd : Then he did not return to visit them for a Fortnight, to give them time to settle every thing and fix themselves ; but when he came, he was much pleas'd to see how magnificent the Apartments look'd, and more how well *Angelique* appear'd to grace it in her rich Dress, who now had Servants to wait on her : *Angelique's* Bed, and Chamber, and Closet, was as fine as the Lady's whose service she had quitted ; her Mother had her Apartment ; and they had their Anti-chamber, Drawing-Room, and a Kitchen suitable, with Accommodations for the Servants : the Foot-boy's Livery was fine as a Lord's Servant ; the Stair-case was turn'd on purpose towards the Garden, so that none of this Family were seen by the Street, and the People of the House never saw any of them, because the Back-doors of the House that open'd into the Garden were shut up, so that they could only see them pass ; to avoid which, *Contamine* had caused to be built two little Parlors on one side of the Garden, very finely painted and furnish'd, and on the other a close Arbour with Seats ; so that you might pass through either to the Gate without being seen : The House being very large, he had separated this Wing from the rest, which by his order the Gentleman whom he had plac'd in the lower Floor, who was a Lawyer, had let to a Merchant, who pay'd fifty Pounds

Pounds a Year for it, which *Angelique* receiv'd from the Lawyer's hands : This House, and all that Monsieur *Contamine* then gave her, she at this Day enjoys ; and he has added so much to it, that should he die to-morrow and leave her nothing more, she is able to keep up her Grandeur and live as well as now ; tho she at present keeps a Coach and six, and three Footmen. Monsieur *Contamine* was now entirely pleas'd ; and *Angelique*, far from appearing what she had been, took the Air and Behaviour of a Woman of Quality : he desir'd her to perfect her self in Musick, Singing, and Dancing ; she willingly consented, and in a short time, learning of the best Masters, attain'd those Accomplishments in perfection, besides Painting in Miniature, for which she had always had a Fancy ; in one Year she was so much a Mistress of that Art, that she drew her Lover's Picture and her own, by the help of her Looking-glass, and continually presented him with little Pictures of her own drawing, which he esteem'd as things of great value : She soon became the Admiration of all that neighbourhood who saw or heard of her ; and many young Ladies who visited the Lawyer's Daughters, whom *Angelique* was now grown very intimate withal, seeing her with them, became her Acquaintance, and were at fit Hours permitted to visit her, tho she seldom went abroad : she went by her Mother's Maiden Name, so that none knew who she really was : She lived in this manner for two Years ; in which time her Mother relapsing into her former Illness, dy'd : on her Death-



Death-bed, after having return'd Monsieur *Contamine* thanks for all the Obligations he had confer'd on her and her Daughter, she recommended her to his care, commanding her to continue virtuous, and always behave her self in such manner as she had done hitherto, to render her self worthy the Honour he design'd her; saying a thousand pious and handsom Things to both, and dy'd like a good Christian. Her Daughter bury'd her very handsomly; and reflecting that she was now bereft of her best guard, and that Opportunities of Monsieur *Contamine*'s being alone with her would easily be found, the Servants not daring to continue in the Room on his giving them the least Intimation to be gone, she was extremely terrify'd, and at a loss what to do; at last she desir'd the Lawyer's eldest Daughter to keep her company and lie with her, secretly desiring her not to quit the Room when he was there: At first he seem'd to take little notice of it, and believing her melancholy with the Loss of her Mother, let it pass; but in some time he whisper'd her that he was uneasy to be under such constraint, that it was very improper a Stranger should be witness of what he said to her, tho innocent and honourable. She told him she would for once oblige him, and take care to be alone the next time he came: he was much transported, and returning the next Day, found her according to her promise reading in the Anti-chamber; after testifying his Joy she shut the Door, and throwing herself at his Feet, thus surpriz'd him: Generous *Contamine*, said she, my Lord



Lord and Husband, whom I esteem above the World, and to whom I am indebted for ten thousand Favours, I have a request to make you that you cannot refuse me ; If you still love me, as I doubt not you do, my Reputation must be equally dear to you as to me ; my Mother dead, I can no longer live secure from Censure, and admit your Visits, permit me to retire to a Convent, till such time as you may fearless marry me : I cannot live under the Notion of a Mistress ; nay, I cannot trust to my own Resolutions ; the grateful Sense of your Favours makes me fear to trust my self and you. He seem'd Thunder-struck at these Words, and trembling lifted her up, and said all he could think of to dissuade her from this unkind Proposal ; tho in his Soul he applauded and more esteem'd her for it : at last he endeavour'd to divert her from it, telling her, laughing, he was pleas'd to find he was more formidable than he thought for, and that her Inclinations were so obliging towards him ; but in the end he agreed that she shou'd continue to keep the young Woman with her, and consented that she should always be present in the next Room with the Door open, when he came, on condition that she should not be within hearing. To this she yielded. This young Woman had been a Pensioner in a Convent with Madam *du Puis*, my Mistress ; they had there contracted a great Friendship, and one Day happen'd to meet abroad in the Exchange, and it chancing to rain, Madam *du Puis* took her into her Coach to carry her home ; in the way she entertain'd Madam *du Puis*

*Puis* with an account of the fine Lady that liv'd in the same House with her Father, and so prais'd her Beauty, Wit, and manner of Life, that *Madam du Puis* was very desirous to see her; for which reason she, when they alighted at the Door, went in with the young Woman, and found *Angelique* sitting in the Parlor below, who knew her at first sight, but she could not for some time recollect who *Angelique* was; at last she call'd her Face to mind, and hearing them call her *Madam de la Bustalière* was convinc'd she was not mistaken; yet she took no notice, but took leave to go home to Dinner: two Days after she return'd, drank Tea there with her, and having order'd me to call on her there, *Angelique*, who perceiv'd she was discover'd, invited us into her Apartment: I need not tell you how much we were surpriz'd at the Furniture and her Attendants; she was not insensible of our Thoughts, and opening her Closet, show'd us Jewels and Curiosities of extraordinary Value; and doubtless *Monfieur Contamine* always design'd to marry her, or else he would never have given her such rich Presents; what was in her Closet only, was a noble fortune for any Woman. I would speak one Word with you alone, said *Madam du Puis*; with all my Heart, said *Angelique smiling*, I already know what you would say, and what you want to know; I would not have show'd you what I have, but with design to prepare you for what I have to tell you. They went down into the Garden together; and having engag'd her to secrecy, she

acquainted her with the whole Story, of the Truth of which she was in few Days convinc'd, finding that the Peoples Report in the House and Neighbourhood was in all things agreeable : Madam *du Puis* inform'd me of the whole ; after this she often visited her, and she continu'd to live after the same manner a whole Year after her Mother's death, and had been still a Maid, in all probability, had it not been for a lucky Accident.

One Day, the Princess of *Cologne* went to the Fair at *St. Germain* ; Madam *de Vougy*, who still liv'd with her, bore her company : this Lady went into a Looking-glass shop, to buy two crystal Brapches she saw there ; she had no Attendants but her Gentleman-Usher, her Page, and two Footmen : at the same time *Angelique*, attended by the Lawyer's two Daughters, came into the same Shop, to buy a Pocket-glass for Monsieur *de Contamine*, to present him for a Fairing ; she was magnificently dress'd, her Gown and Petticoat was Gold Brocade ; she had a Necklace, Cross, and Ear-rings, all of brilliant Diamonds ; her Hair and Stomacher was full of Jewels ; to be brief, she was as fine as the Princess, nor did her Air and Mein speak her less ; her Linen and Lace was futable, for *Contamine* was continually buying the finest Things he could meet with for her, and it was to oblige him she went thus dress'd : He had charg'd her to go to the Fair this Day so adorn'd, because he would meet her there, and show her as a Lady he made court to, to some of his Friends : her Footman and Waiting-maid was behind her ;



her ; the Shopkeeper show'd her some of the finest Pocket-glasses in his Shop, she chose the best ; at this instant the Princess turning to go away, cast her Eyes upon her, and immediately knew her Face : *Angelique* perceiv'd her, and would have avoided her, but she took her by the Arm ; Madam, *said she*, you make a great Appearance, on my word, you are much alter'd for the better since you left my Palace, pray who have you marry'd ? if you had acquainted us with your good fortune, as it was your Duty to have done, we should not have disgrac'd you ; on the contrary, Madam *de Vougy* and I, with all my Family, should have rejoic'd, and caress'd you : but come, tell me your Husband, and we'll forgive what's past ; sure his Quality is great that can maintain you thus. I am still a Maid, *said she*, in great Confusion. A Maid, *said the Princess with a disdainful Air*, you are an extraordinary Creature indeed ; and so turn'd from her with scorn : for she suppos'd her a kept Mistress, and could not with Reason believe her other.

*Angelique* chang'd pale as Death ; she was distracted at this Treatment ; this was the Thing she had always dreaded : she paid for the Glass, and going out of the Shop, never staid to meet *Contamine*, but throwing her self into a Coach, went directly home with her Attendants ; the two young Women doing all they could to comfort her : So soon as she came home she threw her self upon her Bed, being undrest, and refus'd to eat, and did nothing but weep and sigh : in the  
Even-



Evening *Contamine*, alarm'd at her absence from the Fair, came to see her: he was impatient to know what was the Matter; she told him all, and that she was resolv'd to expose him and her self, and to run the risque of his Mother's Displeasure and losing him for ever, rather than not justify her self to the Princess. All he could urge could not persuade her from it; she vow'd she would rather chuse to be a Servant again, and restore him all he had given her, than lie under such a Scandal: 'Tis for your own honour, *said she*, that I should do it; how can you suffer a Person whom you design to make your Wife to be thought your Mistress? in fine, tho he told her it would ruin both, she continu'd her Resolution, and he could gain nothing more, but that she would defer it to the next Day, it being then almost Night. Do you think, *said he*, they will credit what you say on your own word? I will refer them to you, *said she*, and if you will not justify me, I will retire to a Convent, and die in Peace, and my Confessor shall right me when I am in the Grave; my Resolution is fix'd unalterably: He threw himself twenty times at her Feet, but all in vain; so he left her, and she went to bed so soon as he was gone, but could not get one wink of sleep, but lay studying how to vindicate her self to the Princess, and by what means to get admittance to her; at last she thought of *Madam du Puis*: so soon as it was Morning, finding her self unable to rise, the Disorder of her Mind having thrown her into a Fever; she sent her Footman with a

F Letter

Letter to her, to entreat her to come to her immediately: she order'd the Boy to call a Coach and bring her to her, that he might not stay till Madam *du Puis*'s own was got ready. Who was much surpriz'd at the receipt of this Note, and immediately rose, asking the Lad what was the Matter; he answer'd that his Lady was ill, and thought she shou'd have dy'd in the Night: Madam *du Puis* ask'd no more Questions, but in her Deshabille threw her self into the Coach and went to her; she found the Surgeon and Physician in the Chamber, whom the Lawyer and his Wife had sent for, greatly respecting *Angelique*, and heard from their Daughter how ill she was: she bid all quit the Room when Madam *du Puis* enter'd it; then with a Flood of Tears she told her Adventure, and Resolution to hazard all to clear her Reputation. Madam *du Puis* offer'd to go to Madam *de Vougy*, and do all she desir'd: she was so touch'd with her Friend's Condition, whose Words were interrupted with Tears, that she immediately went away in the Hackney Coach to the Palace of *Cologne*, and found Madam *de Vougy* just risen out of Bed, who was much surpriz'd at her coming there so early, and more when she told her the Business she came about: Madam *du Puis* had some difficulty to persuade her of *Angelique*'s Innocence; but at length she credited it on her Word: then they went to the Princess, who was still in Bed, and having acquainted her with *Angelique*'s Story, she gave leave that she should come to her  
and

and justify her self, ordering them to fetch her to the Palace forthwith. As soon as Madam *de Vougy* was dress'd, they went in the same Coach to *Angelique's*, whom they found not alone; for Monsieur *Contamine*, who had pass'd the Night with as little Sleep and Satisfaction as she had, was come to visit her, with design, if possible, to persuade her not to pursue her Resolution of the Day before; but finding her so ill, and alter'd, he forgot all Considerations, and not being able to utter one word, fell on his Knees on the Carpet by her Bed-side, there taking her Hand, they both wept, and remain'd in a profound Silence; in this Posture the Ladies found them: *Angelique* gave a Shriek when they enter'd the Chamber, which rous'd Monsieur *Contamine* from his Transport of Sorrow; he rose, and saluted them with all the Civility he was able in the Disorder he was in: Madam *de Vougy* and he look'd on one another for some time with much Confusion; but Madam *de Puis* put an end to it, by saying to *Angelique*, My dear Friend I have succeeded; the Princess is ready to hear you, and has honour'd you with sending this Lady to conduct you to her; the generous Princess will make you Reparation for the severe Censure she pass'd on you yesterday, so soon as you have made your Innocence appear; your Appearance being so magnificent deceiv'd her, and when she heard you aver you were not marry'd, 'twas natural to suspect your Virtue; yet she protests she thought Necessity not Inclination had undone you, and wish'd you well: Madam *de Vougy* confirm'd what she



said. *Angelique* thank'd them, and before Monsieur *Contamine* related all the Story, and his Proceedings, even from the beginning, and the Visits he made her while she liv'd with Madam *de Vougy* in the Palace, and concluded thus; Madam, could I do less than I have done, for a Man who shew'd such Affection for me, and acted so generously; and could I refuse to live and go dress'd more suitable to his Quality, who has destin'd me to the Honour of being his Wife? Madam *de Vougy* was much pleas'd with the Story, and pleasantly rallied Monsieur *Contamine* for abusing her Credulity, and making her a Property. He handsomely excus'd all, and ask'd Pardon. Then she said, with a serious Air, all is forgot: I now desire both your Friendships; and to deserve it, I will return to the Princess, and say all I can in your favour. Then *Contamine*, making a Sign to *Angelique*, she pull'd a rich Diamond Ring off her Finger and presented it to her, which with some difficulty she accepted: then they so prest her and Madam *du Puis* to stay breakfast, that they consented; and *Angelique* being now more at ease in her Mind, sat up in the Bed and entertain'd them, sending for the Lawyer's Wife and Daughters, to whom nothing was now a Secret: Breakfast over, the Ladies took leave; and *Angelique* beg'd Monsieur *Contamine* to go into another Room, with the Lawyer's Wife and Daughters, that she might get some Sleep: she slept sweetly for some Hours, and waking, found her Fever gone; but was very weak, so that she could not rise  
all



## French LOVERS.

FOR

all that Day ; during which, Monsieur *Contamine* and the young Women kept her company.

*Madam de Vougy* and *du Puis* return'd to see her the next Morning, and were glad to find her perfectly recover'd, and told her the Princess long'd to see her. She said she wou'd dress herself in the Afternoon, and wait of her Highness. *Contamine* lent her his Coach, for he was now resolv'd to run all Hazards ; and believing his Mother would soon be inform'd of all, was determin'd to stand the shock ; and if he could not obtain her leave, to marry *Angelique*, having already provided for her, to continue to live with her as he had hitherto done : so she dress'd herself richly, but more modestly than before, and went in his Coach to the Palace ; and going into the Princess's Apartment, every body admiring her as she pass'd along, she threw herself at her Feet : the Princess taking her up, had her into her Closet, and kept her there three Hours, making her relate all her Story ; which she concluded, protesting she never had been one single Moment with Monsieur *Contamine* alone, out of the sight of her Mother or the Lawyer's Daughter's since she left the Palace : Nor would he suffer me, *said she*, to have thus expos'd him to your Highness, were not his Designs honourable, and my Virtue unblemish'd. The Princess embrac'd and believ'd her, for all Things spoke in her favour, and assur'd her she would use all her Interest with *Madam Contamine* and the Family to procure their Happiness : she made her dine with her

Maids of Honour ; and bid her fend her Lover's Coach back to him, because she would carry her home in her own. After Dinner they had a long Conversation, in which *Madam du Puis* inform'd the Princess that *Angelique* was well born, and how her Mother came to take care of her, her Father having been one of the bravest and greatest Officers in *Monfieur du Puis's* Regiment ; that both her Father and Mother were descended from two of the most antient and noble Families in *Anjou*, tho he was but a younger Brother. The Princess complimented her on this Subject ; saying, Virtue is sufficient to ennoble those of humble birth, but to be born above the Vulgar is a double advantage : She made her promise that *Monfieur Contamine* should come along with her the next Day to visit her : after which she took her into her own Coach, and went home with her, accompany'd with *Madam du Puis* and *de Vougy* ; she had the Curiosity to view all her Apartment, and all the fine Things in her Cabinets ; nay, she would see the Lawyer and his Family. She was extremely pleas'd and satisfy'd with all she saw, and repeated her desire of seeing *Monfieur Contamine* ; saying, when she took her leave, *Angelique*, I shall expect your Lover and you to-morrow after Dinner. He came that Evening to his Mistress, impatient to know what had pass'd, and was transported to hear that she was so well receiv'd. That is not all, said *Angelique*, she has made me promise to bring you with me to-morrow ; what do you say, will you

you do me that publick Honour? Yes, my Dear, *said he*, and I shall be proud to give you this Proof of my Respect for you; I will call upon you to-morrow with my Coach to carry you thither: but pray oblige me in two things, send a Note to *Madam du Puis* to be there; and tho you charm my Eyes in the most negligent Dress, yet let me to-morrow see you shine in all that Art can adorn the Fair with. I understand you, *said she*, and I will credit you, fear not. She fail'd not to go the next Morning to *Madam du Puis*, and they concluded that Day would decide *Angelique's* Fate: for after so publick an Action, it would be no longer a Secret. *Madam du Puis* had acquainted me with what had pass'd, and we were all impatient to hear the Event of this Visit. *Contamine* came at the time appointed to fetch her, and I being with my Mistress, beg'd the favour of him to set me down at the *Dauphin* Street, with design to see his Mistress, whom we found dress'd in such a manner as dazell'd our Eyes: Her Hair, Neck, and Breast were full of Diamonds; the Charms of her Person and Habit made her appear a Goddess, or at least something divine. It was easy to see *Contamine's* Satisfaction in his Eyes. Having satisfy'd my Curiosity I took leave, and they proceeded to the Palace, where the Princess receiv'd them kindly; and after some talk in publick, retir'd with *Contamine* into her Closet, where she question'd him about *Angelique's* Conduct and his; asking why he did not marry her, since he was long since of Age, and in-

F 4

dependent

dependent of any body ; this makes me suspect, *said she*, your Designs are not honourable, and that you hope in the End to gain what you cannot as yet obtain. No, Madam, *said he*, my respect for her equals her Virtue ; I have often propos'd to marry her secretly, but she has refus'd me ; her rigid Virtue makes her decline every thing that may occasion Censure, tho justifiable in her own Conscience : she will be mine publicly, or die a Virgin, as I protest to God I believe she is to this Moment : Your Highness knows my Mother's Ambition ; I so fear to disoblige her, that I dare not propose to her the only thing that can make me happy, lest it should make her wretched, and draw her Anger on me : she has propos'd several Persons to me, and finding me decline all Offers, suspects that I am engag'd ; but supposing by my Silence it will not be for her Ease to know it, she urges me no farther : This generous Procedure has ty'd up my Tongue, and I tremble at the Thoughts of her knowing my Secret, lest it shou'd break her Peace. You are, *said she*, a good Son, as well as a good Lover ; I honour and esteem you : confide in my Management, I will procure your Happiness, and disclosing that Secret to her, spare you all blame and trouble : Fear nothing, I will be a Mediatix between you. He beg'd her to reflect on the hazard she run of undoing them. No, no, *said she*, I will take care to merit your Thanks, not your Reproaches. Taking leave of the Princess who he saw was determin'd to speak to Madam Contamine, he acquainted  
Ange-



*Angelique* and *Madam du Puis* with what had pass'd : His Mistress was much pleas'd, for she knew the Princess was a Person to whom his Mother neither would, or indeed could refuse any thing : she testify'd her Joy by many little Freedoms she gave him, not doubting but they should be soon freed from all restraint. *Madam du Puis* shar'd their Joy. The next Day the Princess sent for *Angelique* to the Palace, and gave her an Apartment ; saying it was more honourable for her to reside there till things were concluded. This a little shock'd the Lovers, who could no more speak together with any freedom : She obey'd, but fear'd the Success ; and saw that if his Mother should not comply, their Secret being known, Honour would oblige her to retire from him into a Convent, where she must languish till her Death releas'd her. He was rather more distracted than she, and repented his rashness ; and wish'd he had rather melted his Mother with Tears, and pleaded his own Cause, than thus to seem to compel her, by employing a Person whose Quality and Power over her, made it almost impossible for her to deny her : He went home so disorder'd, and with so alter'd a Face, that his Mother perceiv'd it, and tenderly ask'd what ail'd him : It is done, *said he*, and I will think no more. The good Lady was frighted, and fear'd some Fever had seiz'd his Head ; she fell a weeping : This Sight quite unman'd him, the big Drops roll'd down his Face, and he beg'd they might be left alone : then falling down at her Feet, he said, My dear Mother,

ther, my Mind is sick, not my Body ; forgive me that I have once done a thing to offend you. She bid him rise, but he remain'd in that suppliant Posture, and related all he had done, every particular, even to the Discovery the Princess of *Cologne* had made, and her design to ask her Consent to their Marriage: He told her he would continue to her Death single if she commanded him, and that he would never disobey her, and implor'd her Pardon in such Terms as would have melted a Barbarian : in fine, he said and did all that could manifest the most tender and passionate Love for the Lady, and the most profound Respect for his Mother, who was entirely vanquish'd ; yet being desirous to know *Angeli-que's* Character from others, she delay'd to let him know her Thoughts ; but told him she would consider of it, and if she found all Things agreeable to the Relation he had given her, she would endeavour to comply with his Desires : Mean time she would have him retire to Bed and compose his Thoughts ; he obey'd, and making a profound Bow bid her good-night. His Gentleman sat up with him all Night by her order : But neither she nor *Contamine* could sleep one wink. Early in the Morning, a Gentleman from the Princess of *Cologne* came to speak with Madam *Contamine*, to know what time she wou'd be stirring, because that Princess design'd to make her a Visit ; having something of moment to communicate to her : This Message being carry'd in to Madam *Contamine*, she immediately rose, and desir'd the Gentleman

to stay whilst she was dress'd, and she wou'd go along with him to the Princess. She went accordingly, and found her up, and ready to receive her. *Madam de Contamine* before she went forth sent to know how her Son had rested, and his Gentleman answer'd, not at all till that Hour, when he was fallen into a Slumber: she order'd that he should not be disturb'd, or told where she was gone if he wak'd, lest it should cause a fresh Tumult in his Thoughts. The Princess was much pleas'd at her Civility in coming; she embrac'd and thank'd her: then they retir'd into her Closet, where they spent some time together; after which, coming forth, *Madam de Cologny* order'd *Angelique* to be call'd, who during their Conversation had, as you may well believe, been on Thorns, to know the Event of it; having receiv'd Orders from the Princess to dress herself in the same magnificent Habit, and the Jewels she had on when *Contamine* brought her in to her. She was in great Confusion when she was call'd for, tho she expected it: she enter'd the Room with a Modesty and Bashfulness, that at first Sight gain'd *Madam Contamine's* Heart: Come near, *Angelique*, said the Princess, putting forth her Hand; then she presented her to *Madam Contamine*: See, Madam, said she, if your Son has not made a good Choice; I am confident you will dearly love and value her, when the Beauties of her Mind are as well known to you as those of her Face; and I assure you she has a Soul more lovely than her Person. *Angelique* was in so great a Disorder

order that she scarce knew what was said. I confess, *said Madam de Contamine*, that my Son is not to be blam'd; I believe *Paris* cannot show a more charming Woman: but it is not to your Beauty that you owe the Condescension I show, in giving my Consent to my Son's Marriage with you; but in the first Place, to the Character the Princess has been pleas'd to give me of you, who assures me you are wise and virtuous; remember to thank her as you ought: next, to the Submission and Respect my Son has always show'd to me; I hope you will be the same, and that I shall never repent the having made you my Daughter. *Angelique* made no answer before the Princess, but shedding Tears, made a profound Reverence: The Princess ran to her Closet to fetch a little Cabinet, and left them together; then *Angelique* threw herself at *Madam Contamine's* Feet, kiss'd her Hands, and gave her a thousand Thanks for her Goodness, and assur'd her she wou'd respect and love her equally with *Monfieur Contamine*. The Princess returning, saw her in this Posture, and was pleas'd at it; she took her up, and kiss'd her, and gave *Madam Contamine* the Cabinet, which was full of Jewels, a Present fit for a Princess to give: Here, *said she*, is something to portion her, I will have the Wedding here in my House; she is mine, and I will give the Entertainment; and what I do now is but an Earnest of my Love: my Interest and Favour shall make her no contemptible Fortune; she may depend on my Protection, and may perhaps have Proofs of it  
 sooner



sooner than she expects. The Princess made them stay Dinner, and let her set down at Table with her; a Favour she did to very few: and she has had this Honour continu'd to her ever since. After Dinner, Madam Contamine took her home with her, with Madam du Puis and de Vougy. I need not tell you how transported Monsieur Contamine was, who was still very ill in Bed; but his Joy was such, that it so increas'd his Fever, that it was two whole Months before he was able to quit his Chamber, and be marry'd; the *Angelique* scarce ever left his Chamber, but at Night. They have been marry'd two Years last Easter; she has brought him two lovely Children, and is big with a third: She is ador'd by her Husband and Mother-in-law, who cannot bear her out of her Sight; and when Monsieur Contamine is by any Business oblig'd to lie from home, the Mother and Daughter lie together: in fine, there is not a happier Family in the whole World, nor a better Wife and Daughter-in-law than *Angelique*; she is belov'd by all the World, the Princess doats on her, and 'tis by her Interest that Monsieur Contamine has gotten such advantageous Places, and become so great.

And now I have told you all the History of this Lady, I wish my Adventures with Madam du Puis may end as fortunately. *I doubt it not, said des Frans, 'tis your own Fault if it don't; I know you are inclin'd already to acknowledge your Fault, but Shame restrains you.* Well, well, *said des Ronais,* we shall see how Things are to-morrow, you shall do  
what

what you will with me. Monsieur du Puis enter'd the Room at this instant, to fetch them to Supper at his House. I have done what I could, *said he*, to keep my Cousin ; but Madam de Contamine has carried her away with her : However they have invited me to dine at my Cousin's to-morrow, and assured me you will be there, *addressing himself to Monsieur des Frans*, and that you will bring a Friend along with you whom I am no Stranger to, perhaps it is Monsieur des Ronais. *By chance, you are a Wizard at a Guess*, *said des Frans* laughing. You will then at last be my Cousin ? *said he to the Counsellor*. They will persuade me to something like it, *said he smiling*. 'Tis a fine thing, *said du Puis*, to have Invitations from the Ladies. *Let Monsieur de Ronais alone*, *said des Frans*, *let the Ladies tease him ; come, let us go to Supper, for I have talk'd my self adry : We'll drink their Healths to-night and visit them to-morrow*. Being come to Monsieur du Puis's, they were splendidly entertain'd ; and *des Frans* informing him that he had a mind to fix in Paris, and was inquiring for some Employment proper for him, he told him of one which was to be disposed of. They agreed to go about it early the next Morning, it being what *des Frans* liked ; and they parted not till it was late.

According to Appointment, they went the next Day and purchas'd it ; but this took them up till two at Noon, when *des Ronais* reminded them of their Appointment, they both fell a laughing, at which he was confus'd. When they came there they found a  
great

## French LOVERS. 111

great deal of good Company, who chid them for making the Dinner wait. *Du Puis* said, It was not Monsieur *des Ronais's* Fault, for he hasten'd us, I assure you, being unable to live any longer at variance with you, Cousin, speaking to *Madam du Puis*. *Des Ronais* blush'd at these words. *Madam de Contamine* taking him by the Shoulder, said, Come hither *Hypochondriack*, come throw your self at your Mistress's Feet, and ask Pardon for your Follies. *Ah! that is not fair*, said *des Frans*, he is come to bear her Justification, not as a Suppliant. Her Eyes, said *des Ronais*, have convinced me of her Innocence, who can look on them and not forgive the blackest Crimes, much more when she protests she's guiltless? Pardon me then, kind, injured Beauty; I will atone for my Suspicions by believing I was mistaken, ere you explain and make it appear that I was so. She ran to him, and clasping him in her Arms, said, I pardon you all; I know my Duty binds me to forgive, and bear with your Weaknesses, but I beg you for the future not to suffer Appearances to deceive you and break our Peace: I have my Witnesses here to undeceive you. Yes, Sir, said a very fine Gentleman whom he did not know, I am the pretended *Gauthier*, with whom you were so angry; and since I have occasion'd your Separation, it is but just that I should reconcile you. Indeed, said *des Ronais*, so agreeable a Man might with ease make a Lady break her Word with a less accomplish'd Lover. Hold, Sir, said a very beautiful

*riful Lady*, don't value my Husband, were you a Woman I should grow jealous: The Letter you saw was writ to me; the fatal Epistle that made you turn Knight-Errant, and play the *Spaniard* with that Lady; he was then my Lover, and is at present my Husband; and we will tell you anon, the Reasons why *Madam du Puis* received our Letters, in order to which we must tell you all that pass'd between *Monfieur de Terny* and me, and therefore we will defer it till after Dinner.

They all sat down to Table, the two Lovers by one another; *Monfieur des Frans* placed himself betwixt *Madam de Contamine* and a Lady whom he had not before observ'd, and who had not spoke one word; he took notice that she would have gone away, but that *Madam de Contamine* hinder'd her; she did not turn her Face towards him, but seem'd to avoid him, which rais'd his Curiosity: At last he remember'd her Face, it was a Lady to whom he had once made love, *Ab! Madam*, said he, clasping her round the Waste, *what lucky Accident brought you hither?* If I had known, said she, that you had been to have come here, I should have staid away; but *Madam du Puis* told me nothing of it. *Are you then displeased with the Sight of me?* said he with a very serious Air. No, Sir, said she, since you have brought *Monfieur de Ronais* along with you. Come don't let us talk, said *Madam de Contamine*, let us eat and be merry, by and by we'll set you all to rights. *Monfieur des Frans* and *Madam Mengy's* Adventures.



ventures shall be related in due time; so they fell a talking of the fatal Effects of Jealousy, and the Pleasure Lovers found in a Reconciliation when undeceived. The Conversation was very agreeable, they being all People of a great deal of Wit and Good-beading. Dinner ended, they all seated themselves to hear Madam du Puis's Vindication, who, addressing herself to Monsieur de Terny said, Sir, you may begin. Monsieur des Ronais said he was satisfy'd, and would spare him the Trouble. No, said she, you have injur'd me publickly, and I will be justify'd in publick. Then Monsieur de Terny began the relation of his Amours with his Wife in this manner.



Mon-



*Monfieur de TERNY's and  
Madam de BERNAY's His-  
tory.*



Was not born in this City, but I came to it so young that I account my self one of your Townsmen: I came of a tolerable good Family in the Province where I was born; but here we are little known. I was very young when my Father sent me to this Place for Education, designing me for the Army: Being capable of a Post, I went into *Flanders* with a Commission, where I was, in a Skirmish, wounded and carry'd to *Calais* to be cured. There I met with a brave young Officer, a *Parisian*, who was likewise wounded, much of my own Age, his Name was *Monfieur de Bernay*; he was the Son of a Man who was immensely rich; we became very intimate, and return'd to *Paris* together: We made several Campaigns together, and I bought a Company in the Regiment he was in; after which we made two Campaigns more: in a word, we were inseparable Companions, and I was so happy as to gain his  
-Father's

Father's Esteem, who loved me then, as much as he has since hated me.

My Friend fell in love with a very fine Woman, and made me his Confident ; but I was yet a Stranger to that Passion, and often rallied him for passing the Nights in talking of his Mistress. I was at this time about Twenty-seven Years old : He had an elder Sister who was marry'd, and two younger who were Pensioners in a Convent some Leagues from *Paris*. He one day ask'd me to go with him and Madam *de Ornex*, his marry'd Sister, to see them. I gladly accepted the Offer, having never seen these Ladies ; I had often heard him speak of the eldest with great Affection ; but when I saw her I was charm'd : She was dress'd in black, being in Mourning for her Mother, but I thought her an Angel, and griev'd that she was to be sequester'd from the World ; for I found they were both design'd for Nuns. Her Air and sprightly Look told me that she disapprov'd her Father's Choice, and was much sicker for the World. I took the liberty to speak my Thoughts aloud : My Friend, said I to *de Bernay*, your Sisters are too charming to be ravish'd from our Sight ; none but the Deform'd or Foolish should be cloister'd ; Ladies who have such Wit and Beauty should be left at liberty, to increase the World ; 'tis a Sin to hinder such from marrying. *Clementine* modestly answer'd with a Blush, That, on the contrary, it were an Injury to Heaven, to offer only those to it whom the World rejected ; and that no Face or Mind could be too good

to be a Votary to Piety: 'Tis not to God, *said I briskly*, Madam, that you make this Sacrifice ; but to your Father's Humour, and to aggrandize your Brother and Sister ; and had you been born the eldest of either Sex, the Convent would never have had the Honour of holding you ; and, if I can read your Face, 'tis their Vows, not your own, that you offer up to Heaven : Madam *de Ornex* reddend', and we broke off the Discourse. Returning home she quarrel'd with me for giving her Sisters such ill Advice ; but I turn'd the railery, saying, It was the Priest's Duty to cry up the heavenly Blessing and Excellency of a single Life, and a young Soldier's to preach Matrimony and to propagate Mankind ; and that I would do so at every Convent I came to. But finding her grow serious, I said I would go no more to see the charming *Clementine*, and did all I could to remove all Suspicions out of her Head of my future Designs, but I did not succeed ; for Monsieur *des Bernay* told me some Days after, that she had alarm'd his Father about me ; and that he blamed him for his Cruelty to his Sisters, and would do all he could to help me to free her I loved : My Sister, Madam *de Ornex*, *said he*, is already marry'd against her Inclination to a Man she does not love, he is a perfect Brute, she is sickly, and is continually tormented betwixt my Father and him ; My Father is the most obstinate Man living, and will not give my younger Sisters a Groat if they displease him, so that I see no Possibility of your succeeding. I told him I valued not a Fortune, I had enough



nough of my own to make us happy, and beg'd his Assistance to gain her Consent for me. He readily granted my Request, and we secretly went to visit *Clementine*: I courted her, but she answer'd me as one resolved to leave the World. I repeated my Visits, and told her I would free her, if she would consent, from Grates and Walls, and a tyrannick Parent; but received no other Answer but such as made me almost to despair. I went alone to see her, then she bid me return the next Morning to take a Letter she design'd to send her Brother: I did so, and receiving here, slip'd another into her Hand, in which I beg'd her to explain herself some way or other, and let me know if she was compell'd to act as she did, which I suspected. When we read her Letter, we were convinc'd that I was in the right, and that she was watch'd, and had a Nun who stood in hearing whilst we talk'd; and now I was resolv'd to free her at all Hazards. Her Brother fear'd to act any thing in this Affair that might come to his Father's Ear, and could only assist me by getting Intelligence from her. When I return'd to the Convent to see her, I was refused, and school'd by the Abbess and two or three old Nuns in such a manner, that I curs'd them all Bell, Book, and Candle, and almost frighted them out of their Wits, so that they imagin'd me possess'd, and threw such a Quantity of Holy Water upon me thro' the Grates, that having given them a Volley of Curses and Threats, I departed half drown'd like a pump'd Pick-pocket. They soon sent her Father and Sister

complete Account of my Proceedings, telling him I was a very handsom Gentleman, had a bewitching Tongue and Person ; that she was grown careless of her Devotions, disobedient to the Superiors, and appear'd much disorder'd in her Mind, since I had visited there. And now I could no more get sight of her; but her Brother sent one of his Lacquey's, in whom he could confide, with two Letters ; in the one he writ, That he was amaz'd at her impudence in permitting my Visits, and at the Complaints made of her by the Abbess; that he hoped she would be wiser for the future, or else he should no more be so indulgent to her as he had been : In fine, he said every thing that could oblige his Father and the Convent, with Design to have her show it them, to gain their good Opinion of him. And in the other Letter, which the Lad gave her privately, we told her our Design, bid her trust the Bearer with any Letter or Message to us. We succeeded, and I had much less Difficulty to gain her than if she had been at liberty ; for Confinement in a Cloister makes a Woman so uneasy, that she gladly accepts an Offer from a Lover, and is as ready to run into his Arms as he is to receive her, unless her Mind suits that Place, and Choice has made her quit the World : The Vail hides her Blushing, and the Pen performs what the Tongue falters to declare when at liberty: I received a Letter from her in these Terms. At these Words *Madam de Terney* was angry, and bid her Husband desist : Pray don't expose my Weakness, *said she*, 'tis enough you know

know it. In troth, *said he*, my dear, I am so proud of your Affection, that I will acquaint your Friends with it, and not a tittle shall escape their Knowledge. Then, *said she*, I will leave the Room, that I mayn't blush a second time for a Fault you esteem an Obligation : At these words she went into the Garden. I am glad, *said the pleasant Historian*, of my Wife's Absence, she kept me in awe, but now all shall out, and you shall be convinced that I am the happiest Man, and have the best Wife in *France*. But now to the Epistle she sent me, here it is.

*I Am much at a loss to know how I ought to answer you, lest I should say more than is fit for a Virgin, and not enough to express the tender Sentiments I have of your Sufferings : I fear to give you a final Denial, lest I should never have the Means again of seeing you and the World, nor do I wish for one without the other ; yet by condescending to your Desires I fear to lose your Esteem, and to render my self unworthy of your Affection ; Mankind are but too ready, I am daily told, to scorn an easy Conquest ; and you have never been confined to lonely Walls and Cells, where peevish old Maids watch over the blooming Virgins whose cruel Parents doom them to a Cloister, and do dwell debar'd of all Delights. I know you pity me, but how well you love me I can't discover ; unskill'd in all the subtle Arts of your deluding Sex I fancy you sincere. Why did you come to break my Peace, and give me a Disgust for this sweet solitary Life,*  
which

which now appears a Hell: My Terrors of the World are vanish'd, and I fondly fancy that with you I could live happy, tho' expos'd to all the various Troubles that attend a marry'd State. I confide in my Brother, and since you are his Choice, what he directs me I will do. My Hand trembles, a Shower of Tears obscure my Sight, Blushes o'respread my Face, and I am so disorder'd I can scarce say, that you may hope all things that Honour will permit from

CLEMENTINE.

I was transported at the receipt of this Letter. Monsieur de Barney laugh'd: Well, said he, my Sister at eighteen, is as expert in love Affairs as if she had lived in the World: I find she will not be a Nun; but what must we do? Be you but true to me, said I, and I fear not your Father's Anger no more than a blast of Air: I will marry her in spite of all Opposition, do you but stand by me. He swore he would, provided I would keep the Secret; and offer'd to assist me, even in stealing her out of the Convent, on Condition that I design'd nothing but what was honourable: And from that Hour we became as Brothers and faithful Friends, for he was already engaged to a Lady in Paris, and I to my charming Clementine: But, alas! we both received Orders to be gone to the Army. January was past, and tho' it was early in the Season to take the Field, our glorious Monarch had enured his Troops to bear hard Marches, and the Toils of War, and we must immediately



ately repair to our Commands, yet not without another fight of *Clementine*. We went strait to the Convent, and were refus'd Entrance ; he was permitted to go into a Room to her, in presence of the Sisters ; but I was lock'd out. I was almost distracted, but forced to conceal it and keep silence. He testify'd his Dissatisfaction to me when we return'd to *Paris* ; but I resolv'd to see her, let it cost what it would, and did thus effect it. I had a *Valet de Chambre* whose Name was *Gauthier*, the Person who occasion'd Monsieur des *Ronais* to have so much Jealousy and Disturbance, and I have him still ; he could paint finely, he was faithful, and I trusted him ; we rack'd our Brains for some Invention to procure me a sight of her ; and at last agreed that I should put on such a Disguise as render'd it impossible for any body to know me. *Bernay* was to send his Sister some Books she had ask'd for : I put on one of his Servant's Livery Coats, and my *Valet de Chambre* painted my Face with a certain Composition, which so changed my Features and Complexion, that I could not know my own Face in the Glass. I went to see her Brother, thus disguised, with a Letter from my self, desiring an Answer by the Bearer, having put on one of my own Servant's Liveries. He knew all my Domesticks, and ask'd me, seeing I was a Stranger, how long I had lived with Monsieur de *Terny* ? I could not forbear laughing, and so my Voice discover'd me. He admired my Invention, and having himself an Amour with a marry'd Lady in *Paris*, whose Husband was very jealous,

lous, and who had made some Discovery of their Intrigue a little before, he made use of the same Stratagem that very Day to see her, and often afterwards. At these words, perceiving Madam de Contamine smile, Ladies, *said he*, you think I romance; but upon my Soul all I tell you is true. And now fearing no Discovery, I set out for the Convent with Letters from Monsieur de Bernay to both his Sisters; in that to *Clementine* I had inclosed one from my self, to inform her that I was the Bearer. She appear'd much alter'd, and so pensive and pale, that I could scarce hide my Concern; but her Sister appear'd as gay and sprightly as if she was design'd for the World, and look'd much fitter to make one in a Ball at Court, than to mutter *Ave Maria's* in a Convent; and I was, in the End, the fortunate Instrument of freeing her, as well as my Wife. Tho she at present hates me, yet she is under a singular Obligation to me for that Service. I staid not long; but was order'd to return for an Answer to the Letters in the Afternoon, and then I receiv'd such a one as highly satisfy'd me. *Clementine* talk'd to me in Terms her Sister did not comprehend the meaning of; but Love had taught us to understand every Motion and Look of one another. I read her Letter so soon as I was out of sight of the Convent; it was full of the most charming Assurances of her being sensible of my Pains, and ready to share my Fortunes; and yet there was the most moving Reproaches on my leaving her: She concluded, that if I proved false, and return'd not soon

soon to free her, she would renounce the World, and never hearken to any more Proposals of Love. *Bernay* and I set out the next Morning for the Army; we went together to *Fribourg*, but there we parted: The *Mareschal de Turenne* took me with him to *Strasbourg*, and he was sent away with a Detachment commanded by *Monfieur de Duras*. I shall not trouble you with the relation of this Campaign, which was one of the most glorious this great Man ever made, whom we have so lately lost, and never can cease to lament: We repulsed the *Germans*, and pursued them; and when I thought I was near rejoining my dear Friend *de Barney*, who was gone before, I learn'd the dismal News that he was kill'd three Days before my arrival, in a Skirmish near *Ostembourg*. This Loss so much afflicted me, that it would but renew my Grief to continue the Subject. But I receiv'd News from *Paris* of a quite different nature: *Clementine* writ me word that *Madam de Ornex*, her eldest Sister, was dead; and that her Father had taken her home from the Convent. I regretted this Lady (tho my Enemy;) her cruel Father and brutal Husband had broke her Heart, and I hoped that *Monfieur de Bernay* would be touch'd with her Death, and not constrain *Clementine* and his youngest Daughter to marry against their Inclinations, since they were all he had left, and now sole Heiresses of his great Fortune. I was transported to know that *Clementine* was no longer lock'd up from me, and had great reason to hope that she would now be mine with his Consent, and

with this flattering View I hastied back to *Paris*, and found her at her Father's House, who was very sick, but not with Remorse of Conscience ; but the Fatigue he had undergone to get part of his Daughter's Fortune out of *d'Ornex's* Hands, as had been agreed in case she died without Issue, for his Son-in-law and he were Men of the same Temper, and strove with equal Fury to cheat one another : They were at Law, and it was the Diversion of all that knew them, to hear the Trials between them. At last they so fell out, that they accused each other of Madam *d'Ornex's* Death ; the Father-in-law recited all the ill Treatments he had given his Daughter, and shew'd him in his true Colours, and pretended a mighty Concern for her loss. The Son was not behind-hand with him ; so that they fully exposed one another, and became the Jest and Aversion of all their Friends and Neighbours, who at last brought them to an Agreement ; but *de Bernay* took it so to heart that he fell sick, and I was in hopes he would have died, nay I confess I heartily wish'd it, but he recover'd after keeping his Bed four Months ; during which I saw *Clementine* every Day without his knowledge, for he had forbid her either to see or speak to me the Moment he heard of my return to *Paris* ; having been before inform'd, as you know, what had pass'd at the Convent. I know not what occasion'd his Aversion to me, unless it was that he knew we loved one another ; and had *Clementine* hated me, I am positive he would have consented to our Marriage ; but this I

was



## French LOVERS.

125

was then a Stranger to ; therefore I went to pay him a Visit on his Recovery, and was very ill received ; yet that I attributed to his having been sick, and fancy'd he was only fretful, and unfit as yet for Conversation : I saw his Daughter alſo with him, who to gain his favour waited on and condeſcended to the meanest Offices to oblige him, not only as his Child but as a Servant. His Behaviour enraged me to the last degree ; even in my presence he threw a Glass of Wine in her Face which she brought him, and he had called for. I ſtaid not long, but quitted the Chamber, unable to restrain my Paſſion at this Sight, and waited below in the Parlour till she came to me, and here, being alone, we ſpoke our Thoughts freely to each other. I ſaid all Love could ſuggeſt to comfort her ; ſhe wept, and own'd ſhe thought herſelf the moſt unhappy Creature breathing. We agreed on means to ſee one another every Day ; all the Servants were ready to aſſiſt us, for none approved his brutiſh Conduct to their young Lady : There was not a Day paſt in which I did not ſee her, and learn ſome new Extravagance of him ; yet ſhe always retain'd the Reſpect due to a Father, for him. She grew at laſt ſo weary of his Uſage, that ſhe would gladly have return'd to her Convent had not I oppos'd it. At length I prevail'd with her to promiſe to marry me without his Conſent, if I could not obtain it ; in order to which I imploy'd all my Relations to intercede for me, tho much againſt their liking ; for they thought my Fortune and Family ſuperior to hers, and

I had much ado to prevail with them to condescend to ask him for her for a Wife for me. They were so confident of his accepting the Offer, that they doubted not in the least of my having her ; but she and I much fear'd it would be otherwise. He answer'd, that he did not like me ; and that I should not have her. This rude reply was all they could obtain from him ; and being press'd, he said in a Fury, The Devil should sooner have her than me. This was but what we expected ; so we resolv'd to fly, and marry out of *France*, since we could not do it in *Paris* secretly ; for I was then Captain of a Troop of *Calvinists* and bred one my self, yet that hinder'd not *Clementine* and her Brother, who both knew it, from loving me : and her Father had not this Pretext to make, as an Excuse for his refusing her to me, since he believed me a zealous Catholick.

We design'd to go for *England*, where I should enjoy my Liberty, and be protected. I had a rich *Hugonot*-Aunt who design'd me her Heir, and tho I was much inclin'd to be a Catholick, yet the fear of disobliging her made me silent ; her Fortune was very considerable, and I depended on her Assistance in this Exigence ; for I had told her a Year before, that I had a Design of hindering a young Lady from being a Nun. She said it was a very good, charitable Deed, and promised to aid me ; she abhor'd the Nuneries, and Vows of Chastity were mortal Sins, in her Opinion ; she had buried four Husbands, and tho she was near threescore when the last died, she would

would have marry'd again had not the Ministers and Antients of the Congregation hinder'd her. I writ to her, that I had now gotten the young Lady's Consent to go with me to *England*, and embrace the Reform'd Religion, and beg'd her Help; and laid before her the Merit of such a Deed in saving a Soul: In fine, I sent a most canting Epistle, which I am certain, had it come to her Hands, would have had the desired Effect, and that she would have rais'd all the Money she was able and sent me; but it arrived two Days after she was dead; and that good News came to me in a Packet, in two Days after my Letter went, for she had left me all: And I was under a Necessity of going into the Country for some time, to take Possession of the Estate and settle my Affairs. I acquainted my dear *Clementine* with this good News, and beg'd her to bear with her Father a little longer, till I return'd with all the Money I could raise. And now we alter'd our Design of going to *England*, and resolv'd to go to *Avignon* in the Pope's Territories, where I hoped to find Protection and Friends, having solemnly promised to become a Catholick, which I accordingly perform'd; for I went to a neighbouring Convent, to a Monk who had taken much pains to convert me, and made my Renunciation: and thus I satisfy'd my Conscience and my Mistress. After which we consider'd of a Way to hear from one another during my Absence: *Clementine* had been long acquainted with *Madam du Puis*, for they had been Pensioners together in the Convent, and dear

G 4

Friends.

Friends. She trusted her with our Secret, and desired her to receive all my Letters, which I agreed to write by the Name of *Gauthier*; and the Answers were to be directed by *Madam du Puis* in the same Name, for fear of *Monfieur de Bernay*'s discovering our Converse by any Intelligence at the Post-house. This unlucky Stratagem occasion'd the Rupture between you and *Madam du Puis*; to clear whose Innocence I have brought the Letter which *Clementine* writ to me, to which I sent the Answer which you unfortunately found at *Madam du Puis*. *Monfieur de Ronais* rose, and embracing his Mistress, beg'd Pardon for his past Treatment. But *Monfieur de Terny* bid him keep silence, and hearken to the Story. Things thus order'd, *said he*, I took leave of *Clementine* and went post for *Grenoble*. At my arrival my Relations were amazed to find that I was become a zealous Catholick, and no longer a rigid *Hugonot*: They willingly assisted me to dispatch my Affairs, and in this Time I received this Letter from *Clementine*, which you, *Monfieur*, shall read to the Company, *said he*, giving it to *des Ronais*. He read these Words.

#### THE LETTER.

*I* Own I promised you to endure my Father's cruel Treatment till your return; but ever since you left Paris, which is now two Months, he has been ten times worse than ever: You are no Stranger to his Ways, but now they exceed all you can imagine; he before used me  
like



like a Slave, the which for your Sake I patiently submitted to ; but now he has raised a new Persecution against us, and commanded me in three Days time to marry a Man whom he has chosen for me, a brutal Officer, who at first ask'd him for me with no other View but my Fortune ; but seeing me, is fallen in love, which has redoubled my Persecution : He is a Man of Quality, but no polite or well-bred Man ; for tho I freely told him at first that I was pre-engaged, and beg'd him to leave me, yet he persisted in his fulsome Addresses, and I was two Days confin'd to my Chamber, to force me to sign the Contract ; but I was resolved rather to die, than break my Faith with you ; so my Father's Gentleman took pity on me, and assisted me to make my Escape. I past two Nights with Madam du Puis, by whose means I am at last got into a Convent, out of my Father's knowledge. I have changed my Name, and no body does know who I am, make haste to deliver me : Direct your Letter to Madam du Puis ; but rather bring the Answer to this your self, in Person. Put your Letter in no Cover, nor mention my Name in any part of it, for she will know who 'tis for by the Hand. I wait your arrival, to throw my self into your Arms : as a sure Asylum ; and my Father's Cruelty to me shall be my just Excuse, before God, for whatever my Despair makes me do, and dispense me from asking his Consent, or consulting him in my Affairs : I shall no longer respect him as a Father, but as a Tyrant.. Should Heaven deprive me of you, and pre-

130 *The* ILLUSTRIOUS

vent our Meeting, I am determin'd to die in this Convent, and never see the World again. Adieu. Love will, I doubt not, lend you Wings, to fly to the Relief of

Your Affectionate, Distressed

CLEMENTINE.

On the Receipt of this Letter, *said de Terny*, I return'd with all possible speed to *Paris*, and alighted at my Lodging. *De Bernay*, who knew not where his Daughter was, and concluded that I was privy to her Flight, had set many Spies to watch my Arrival, and dog me. The first Place I went to was to *Mademoiselle du Puis*, whom I found in Tears, by reason of the fatal Mistake my Letters had occasion'd between her and you, *Monfieur des Ronais*; and she, related all the Story to me; at which I was extremely afflicted, and desirous to disabuse you; but you were gone from *Paris*, and I writ a Letter to you to *Grenoble*, but it never came to your Hands; but was return'd to me, no body being able to get any Intelligence of you; and I could never meet with you since, because I staid not long in *Paris*; and it is but three Days since my Wife and I return'd hither. *Madam du Puis* having told me the Convent to which *Clementine* was retired, I went directly thither, and found her more firm in her Resolutions than I could have expected: We, that Hour, fix'd on the next Day to depart thence together; and, had I not used this Precaution of going first to *Madam du Puis*,

I had certainly been seiz'd, and accused of a Rape in stealing *Clementine*, and prosecuted for it; but Fate directed me for the best, and we were afterwards marry'd in her Father's presence, tho' against his Consent, and he is not yet friends with me. This was six whole Months after my Arrival, for we met with a great Shock by the way: I am indeed glad that he now lets us live in quiet, and am ready to be reconcil'd if he was willing; nay, we would willingly make the first Advances to procure it; but, according to all Appearance, we shall have no Justice from him till he dies, for he will give us nothing till Death forces him to make up his Accounts in the other World; and perhaps he will take care to leave his Fortune so intangled, that we shall be plagued with Law-suits and innumerable Troubles, before we shall obtain our Right. But to the Story: He was inform'd by his Spies who dog'd me, what Convent his Daughter was in, and went himself thither the next Morning, and made Use of my Name to gain Admittance to her. I leave you to imagine her Surprise when she saw him thro' the Grates. She said not a Word, but immediately retired; which gave him an Opportunity to say all he desired to the Abbess, whom he threatned horribly, if she suffer'd *Clementine* to go out of the Convent. In this critical Minute I arriv'd in a Coach to fetch her; but found the Scene quite chang'd, and he and I beheld each other with equal dislike, as you may suppose; and had he been of my own Years, no doubt but our Dispute had ended by the

the Sword. I treated him as he deserved, and he abused me handsomly ; insomuch that I was going to strike him with my Cane, which my Footman wisely prevented, and gave me a Moment's time to think ; on which, repenting my rashness, I turn'd my Back upon him, and going into the Coach return'd to my own House ; he likewise went home to his. I was presently inform'd that he had endeavour'd to get out a Proceſs againſt me for a Rape, but the Court had refused it ; ſo he reſolved to make uſe of his pretended Son-in-law, to be reveng'd on me ; in which he had very ill Succeſs. I went the next Day to viſit Madam *du Puis*, and to acquaint her with our Miſfortune, ſtriving to comfort her in hers, which I had unhappily occaſion'd. We lamented one another, and ſhe gave me a Letter from *Clementine*, whom I could not now get a Sight of, and here it is, and I will read it to the Company.

My dear Lover,

*DO* you not ſtand amazed at our Miſfortunes ? You had doubtleſs been a happy Man, had you not been attach'd to me ; I bring ill luck on all that would ſave me. I am more ſtrictly guarded in this Place, to which I retired for a Shelter, than if I were a State-Prisoner, and in a Goal ; yet they permit me to write to you, on Condition that I attempt not to get out of the Convent. You ſhall hear from me always by Madam *du Puis*'s means, beg her to continue her Goodneſs towards us, tho I ſcarce dare to ask it  
lounge,



longer, and am almost distracted when I reflect what my Friendship has already cost her. I am assur'd by the Abbess and Nuns, that my Father shall not take me home, and that I shall stay here in spight of him: But, alas! my Purse is quite empty'd, and therefore as you value my Safety, fail not to pay my Pension, to engage the Convent to protect me, so that they may not trouble my Father for anything, be constant and I will bravely support all Fate can inflict upon me. Write often to me, that, since I cannot see you, I may have the Comfort of knowing that you are well, and that you forget not your

CLEMENTINE.

I writ an Answer immediately, and sent her more Money than she had occasion for at that time, but not enough for something that happen'd shortly after. And now I resolv'd to wait patiently till her Father's Death, or her being of Age gave me a Means to marry her publickly; and thought no more of getting her away either by Force or Fraud, which I thought now impracticable: So I resolv'd to purchase a Place at Court, such a one as I am now going to have, and treated about it. I believe I have already told you, that *de Bernay* delighted only in Mischiefe, and took pleasure in breeding Quarrels. The Son-in-law that he had made choice of was really a brave Man, and an Officer who had behaved himself handsomly in the Army, where he had acquir'd some Honour, but no Riches. *De Bernay's* Fortune would have done him no small Kindness, to have rais'd his ruin'd Family;

mily ; this, and *Clementine's* Beauty, were strong Motives to charm him, and he was furiously vex'd at his Disappointment ; he knew me only by report, yet mortally hated me for being the Cause of it. *De Bernay* had represented me as an insignificant worthless Fellow, who durst not fight. This puff'd up my Rival, who thought to bully me out of my Mistress ; and I being easy to be found, he making Inquiry, soon met with me, and spoke to me in publick, before a great deal of Company, with such a terrible look as would have frightened some People. Sir, *said he*, are you willing that you and I should walk alone into some more private Place ? I was very glad that he explain'd himself in such good Company, and answer'd him coldly : That I had some Business of consequence that required my Presence in *France*, and therefore would run no Risk to oblige me to leave it, or lose my Head on a Scaffold. This confirm'd what *de Bernay* had said to him of me, on which he began to hector and rage so long, that he forgot all good Manners, and abused me grossly, which was what I desired, hoping he would draw upon me before the Company ; so I calmly told him : Sir, I desire you would give me no farther Disturbance, but be gone whilst 'tis well ; for if we grow both angry, one of us will repent it. This made all the Company smile, which more enraged my Rival, who snatching out his Sword ran me into the Arm before I could draw mine ; but I soon return'd it, and in spite of those that endeavour'd to part us, I ran him thro' the Body in two Places.

Then

Then I began to think of my own Safety : He was a Man of a good Family, and tho I had good Witness of what past, yet it was necessary I should quit *Paris*, till my Friends had made it safe for me to return. I retreated to a Friend's, where I staid no longer than whilst I writ a short Letter to *Clementine*, which cost her a Fit of Sickness ; an Account of which I received whilst I was in *England*, to which I fled from *Calais* where I took shipping. And now I concluded that *Clementine* would meet with no more Vexation from her Father, since I was gone ; but I was mistaken, for he could not live without doing Mischief. I staid not long in *England*, but went to *Holland*, being desirous to see that Country and *Flanders* ; from thence I writ to *Clementine* and my Friends at *Paris*, and soon receiv'd Answers to my Satisfaction, as to my Affair concerning my Rival's Death ; on which I return'd thither, and received my Pardon ; but could not get a Sight of *Clementine*, who by a Letter assured me her Father was grown very civil since my Absence, and came often to see her, and talk'd no more of any Proposals of a Husband ; yet would not hear her when she press'd him to confirm our Union : And that she beg'd me to return to *England* for a-while. I obey'd, and was three Months without receiving any News from her, which so distracted me, that I was on the point of returning to *France* ; when a Man in a poor Habit, who had come Post, arriv'd with a Letter from her ; the Contents of which inform'd me, That soon after my Departure  
from

from *Paris*, her Father had taken her younger Sister *Serepta* out of the Convent, in which he had always kept her, and having resolved to give her all his Fortune, had provided a great Match for her. She was no Beauty, but had a tolerable Shape and very agreeable Mein; but her Humour was so like her Father's, that *France* could not shew a greater Devil in Female Shape: She was a great Hypocrite, and as covetous as a Jew. *Du Bernay* conceal'd all his Designs from *Clementine*, seem'd mighty kind to her, and secretly made large Offers to the Sisterhood of the Convent, if they could persuade her to be a Nun; and the Sum he offer'd was sufficient to ingage the good pious Society to try the utmost of their Skill, to make her put on the Habit, and renounce me and the World: Those that are devoted to the Church, seldom let any thing they can get by Policy or Fraud, slip out of their Hands. So that she was teaz'd incessantly on every Hand, both by them and her Father, and Sister, whose Marriage depended on her being professed. The poor Nun who managed our Correspondence of Letters was discover'd, and kept a Prisoner in her Chamber; and this they manag'd so cunningly, that *Clementine* did not know what was become of her: But being told, that she was sent to another Convent by her Father's Order, believed it. Madam *du Puis* try'd in vain to speak to her; all Access was deny'd. Thus poor *Clementine* was left destitute of Friends and Comfort; her Confessor persecuted her Night and Day to consent; nay they proceeded to be so wicked.



wicked as to assure her I was marry'd in *England*. At last they drew up a Petition to the Archbishop in her Name, to desire his leave to be profess'd in three Months time; declaring that she was ready and desirous to be a Nun, and was moved thereto by a secret Call from Heaven, with a long Train of pious Falshoods. This Paper they try'd to force her to sign, which so frighten'd her that she resolv'd on the Means which procur'd our Happiness: She seem'd at last inclin'd to yield, but pretended she had borrow'd a great Sum of Money, three hundred *Louis-d'ors*, of some particular Persons whom she would not declare, and that she would never sign the Writing unless she had that Sum given her to pay her Debts, and Leave to send some Person of her own chusing to carry the Money to her Creditors; and she promised that on this Condition, she would set her Hand to the Paper ten Days after the receipt of the Money. Her Father, knowing that she was not to be moved from her Resolutions, at last complied and gave her the Money, not imagining it was possible that she should send to me, and I come from *England* so soon as to prevent her ruin; but Fate had otherwise decreed.

There was in the Convent a Sister who was a Convert, and appear'd to *Clementine* to have no more Inclination for that Life than herself: To this young Woman she disclos'd her Thoughts, and sollicitated her in Terms so moving to assist her that she prevail'd; nay she promis'd to give her such a Sum of Gold as should procure her a good Husband, in case she

she would venture with her into the World. This Offer, with the Sight of a hundred Pistoles, so charm'd the Maid that she protested she would serve *Clementine* in all things that lay in her power. And she told her, that if she could get a Letter convey'd to my Hands, it was all she ask'd. This Maid had a Brother who was a Tradesman in *Paris*, him she sent for immediately; and told him, he might make his Fortune if he would carry a Letter to *England*, to the Person to whom it was directed, and bring back the Answer in such a number of Days: *Clementine* seconded his Sister's Persuasions with the Sight of a hundred shining *Louis-d'ors*, on which he undertook the Business. And having received the Letter and Money, (having Directions to my Relations, where I resided in *England*, from whom he would be sure to know where I was, if gone thence, and being order'd to follow me to whatever Place I was retired) he took leave, and set out for *Calais* that very Day; and, by good Fortune, he had been a Sergeant under my Command, and gladly flew to serve me; so he made all the speed imaginable, and happily found me at my Kinsman's. There needed no more but the Letter he brought me to make me quit *England*, without delaying one Moment to take leave of any Body. The tender Expressions in which my Charmer assur'd me of her Affection and Distress, made me lay aside all other Considerations: There was but few Days remaining of the Time she had allow'd her, to delay making the fatal Vows that must have  
undone

Joy and Surprize; at last she blest'd me with her charming Voice, and I leave you all to imagine the tender things we then said and thought, yet our Conversation was chaste as Angels; and the Maid never left the Room, tho' *de Bernay* has been so base as to report that we profaned the Convent, and in that harmless Hour committed a Crime our Souls abhor'd. It was no momentary Pleasure I sought for in her, but a lasting Happiness, authoriz'd by the sacred tye of Marriage; we thought only of Measures to attain that honourable honest End, and resolved on what we executed the next Day. So I went out of the Convent, fully determin'd to take her away in spite of all Resistance, even before her Father, Sister, and her Lover's Face, and in Presence of all the Nuns, Priests, and Spectators; nay I would have taken her with me then, could I have prevail'd with our Confidant, but she beg'd me to defer it to the next Day, and on reflection, I thought it best that *Clementine* should give herself to me in the Face of the World, to avoid the Troubles her base Father might put me to, if I should take her away in secret. So soon as I reach'd the Inn I remounted my Horse, and went with all speed to Monsieur the Duke *de Lutry's*, to whom I have the Honour to be related; it was five long Leagues, yet I got there by two a-clock in the Morning, and had the Honour to be admitted to his Bed-side at that unreasonable Hour, where he receiv'd me very kindly. I acquainted him with my whole Design, and beg'd his Assistance and Protection,

which

which he readily granted me ; promising to meet me at the Convent the next Morning, with such of his Friends as he knew would be able to defend me, in case there was any Scuffle or Opposition ; and he accordingly was there at Mass before me, seeming to come there to see the Ceremony. I rested not here, but having obtain'd this Promise from him, took leave and return'd to *Paris*, which I reach'd by day-break ; there I procur'd a Coach and eight good Horses, with a Coachman and Postillion in whom I could confide, with several of my Friends, whose Bravery and Friendship I was well acquainted withal, who swore they would serve me in any thing I desired with their Lives and Fortunes : I conducted them to the place where the Coach was, and there furnish'd them with Horses. And thus I set out for the Convent, and they follow'd me with such Willingness and Resolution, that it seem'd to presage the good Success of our Enterprize.

We took a By-Road for fear of discovery, and stopt at a Village about a Quarter of a Mile short of the Convent : It was but eight a-clock in the Morning when we got to this Place, and therefore you may imagine I lost no time : I was so tir'd and fatigu'd that I could hardly stand on my Legs, but Love and Resolution supported me. We quitted our Horses at an Inn, where we resolved to conceal ourselves and them, till the Hour of executing our Design was come, which was not till after twelve at Noon, and in the mean time breakfasted merrily. I had sent *Gauthier*, my Gentle-



Gentleman, to the Convent before, in order to his giving notice when it was time for me and my Friends to appear ; he was so well disguised that the Devil himself would have took him for another if he had met him, for he was dress'd like a Beggar, in the poorest Rags, and his Face full of Plaisters, one of which cover'd one of his Eyes : I had eight Friends likewise, who being well arm'd under their Coats, mix'd themselves in the Croud in the Church, in order to secure *Clementine* from being drag'd back into the Convent, out of it, in case there should be any Tumult on my appearing. The rest of my Friends, about Noon, went from me, and placed themselves near the Gates of the Convent, to secure our Passage out ; determin'd to oppose all that oppos'd us.

Things being thus disposed, I soon follow'd with the Coach, and their Horses, and stopt in sight of the Convent : *Gauthier* fail'd not to come out and give me the Sign, so soon as my Mistress was enter'd the Chapel, on which the Coach drew up to the Gate, which my Friends immediately seiz'd, and mounting their Horses suffer'd none to enter after me. Alighting, I rush'd into the Chapel boot'd and spur'd, dirty as a Post-boy, having never shifted my Clothes since I left *England*, my Beard was eight Days old, my *Ramilly*'d-Wigg uncomb'd suited the rest of my unpolish'd Figure, to give a Grace to which I had a long Whip in my Hand : *Clementine*, who had been observed to look very sad and pensive before, look'd up as I enter'd the Church, hearing the  
Noise

Noise at the Gate, chang'd Colour and look'd pleas'd ; her Father turning his Head to see who enter'd, saw and knew me, and found too late that the Ceremony would not end so quietly as it had began, since I, whom he had not invited, had made my self his Guest, but it was now too late to prevent it ; besides his Daughter and I had took Measures to hinder him from delaying our Happiness any longer, and she was resolved to declare herself in the Face of the Assembly, if reduced to it. I made way thro' the Crowd up to the Altar, next which the Duke *de Lutry* had placed himself, as being nearest *Clementine*, there being only a little space empty, in the midst of which she stood ; he did me the Honour to embrace and salute me, as if he had not seen me a long time past, and placed me by him, next my Mistress. I kneel'd down for some Moments, and rising made a profound Bow to the fair Votary, who did not so much as lift up her Eyes or seem disorder'd ; but the Vermillion in her blushing Cheeks, and a certain Air of Satisfaction that seem'd to overspread her Face, so well discover'd her Thoughts, that the Duke whisper'd in my Ear, Your Mistress did not look so some Minutes ago ; she doubtless accused you of Negligence and want of Resolution, that you came not to her Relief ; the poor Lady was on the Rack of Expectation. I smil'd ; on which *de Bernay*, whose Eyes were fix'd on me, reddend, and I perceiv'd he was ready to burst with Rage : The Ceremony went on, I waiting with the utmost impatience for the wel-

welcome Question from the Priest to *Clementine*, *What do you desire?* To which she answer'd with great Resolution, as we had agreed, *I demand nothing but Monsieur the Count de Terny for my Husband, if he is willing to accept me for his Wife.* Then she ran into my Arms, in which I clasp'd her fast; whilst the Duke and my Friends surrounded us, and his Servants kept off the Crowd. *Du Bernay*, with his future Son-in-law, Daughter, and all the whole Assembly, were extremely surpriz'd; the Nuns and Clergy seem'd scandaliz'd and amaz'd, and such a Murmur ran thro' all the Chapel, as was very unseemly in so holy a Place, and whilst the blessed Sacrament was expos'd on the Altar. I had now received *Clementine* into my Arms, kiss'd and embraced her in the Face of the whole Congregation: The Priest who was performing the Service, was so astonish'd that he stood silent, and could not utter a word more; he stared upon us with open Mouth, and stood motionless like a Statue, making such a Figure as would doubtless have provok'd me to Laughter at another time; but I had something of more Consequence to think of at this Juncture.

So soon as I could be heard, the Noise abating, I address'd my self to *de Bernay* with a loud Voice, that all might hear me, and I had no sooner pronounced a word but there was a general Silence: Sir, *said I*, God will accept no Sacrifices but what are offer'd with a willing Heart, and voluntarily; and you here profane his sacred Presence, by sacrilegiously forcing

forcing your Child to profess herself devoted to a religious Life and to renounce the World, whilst her plighted Faith and Inclination have made her my Wife, and deprived her of the Power of being any thing but what I please : That Providence, who knows the Secrets of your Soul and all our Thoughts, has this Day prevented you from so wicked a Crime, and will require a strict Repentance at your Hands for what you have done against your Child and me. Here in your Presence I declare, That I accept of your Daughter for my Wife, and in the Presence of God I take her for such, before this august Assembly : Do you, Madam, accept of me for your Husband? Yes, *answer'd Clementine aloud*, I do. Then thus I wed you, *said I, putting a Ring on her Finger and again embracing her* : You see, Sir, *said I to her Father*, that I am your Daughter's Choice, and that I use neither Force or Fraud to gain her, nor can you plead any thing against me : You cannot deny but she is now of age to dispose of herself, since you gave Consent that she should do it in another State of Life : I am of a Family whose Alliance is an Honour to you ; I ask no Fortune with her, she has so much obliged me in thus generously giving herself to me, that I regard not what else she brings, yet what her Mother brought and is her due we shall expect ; and when God calls you hence, if you expect a good Portion in the other Life, you must take care not to wrong your Child of what is her Birth-right here. Then addressing my self to the Priest : Sir, *said I*, will you do us the Favour to marry

H

us ?



us? 'twill oblige us; if not, speak and we shall go to perform that Duty elsewhere. He civilly declined it, fearing the Community's Displeasure, as I suppose. Then I bid *Clementine* take leave of her Father and the Company, which he did with a profound Reverence. I must now salute and wish your Bride Joy, *said the Duke*. Do and welcome, my Lord, *said I*. So he kiss'd her, and whisper'd in her Ear: Fear nothing, Madam, all is secured; follow him without hesitation. I led her out, and she pass'd thro' the Croud with so much Courage and Modesty, that it added a Lustre to her Beauty, nay, not only I but all admired and prais'd her, and my Soul was doubly inflamed with Love and Gratitude: Our Friends so secured the Way, that we went unmolested to the Coach, into which we enter'd with the faithful Confidant of our Amours, the witty *Agnes*, who had escaped out of the Convent during the Disorder, and waited for us there. Our Friends within remain'd, to keep the Gate shut that none might get out to pursue us. Some of my Friends that waited on Horseback, to guard the Coach, accompany'd us to *Lutry*, the Duke's Seat, to which we went full speed; and the Minute I arriv'd there, *Clementine* and I retired into a Chamber which was prepared for us, and there the Duke's Chaplain marry'd us in the Presence of *Agnes* and my Friends, to prevent farther Misfortunes, and secure my Happiness. After which my Friends and all withdrew, to publish it to the Family and Neighbourhood, and left me alone with the

the charming *Clementine*, whom I persuaded to lay aside her dismal monastick Dress, and commit herself to my Arms. Some Hours after which I dress'd and went to the Company, and left her to have new Habit put on by the Ladies of the Duke's Family, who on this Occasion had repair'd to the Castle, to perform the Civility, the Duke had as then no Lady to perform. Whilst we employ'd our time thus agreeably at *Lutry*, the Duke and some other considerable Persons, my Friends, remain'd in the Church, endeavouring to appease *de Bernay's* Fury, who breath'd nothing but Revenge; but at last was fain to be quiet, whilst the Company eat the Banquet prepar'd for the Ceremony, which now serv'd for *Clementine's* Marriage-feast, tho she was not at the Table. After which, all departed seemingly pleased, except the Abbess and Society, who doubtless were extremely vext at the loss of *Clementine's* Fortune; the Duke and our Friends came to *Lutry* immediately after, and we spent fifteen Days there very pleasantly, during which I provided all things necessary for my Wife to appear handsomly at *Paris*, whither I brought her with a Coach and Equipage suiting my Fortune, and the Affection I have for her. I sent twice to my good Father-in-law whilst I was at *Lutry*, to beg his Permission to admit us to pay our Duty to him; but he refused it then. I carry'd her into *Provence* to a small Estate I have there, from whence we arrived but two Days since, in order to my taking Possession of an Employment my Friends have procured

me. This, Madam, *said he, speaking to Madam de Contamine*, is the History of my dear *Clementine's* Adventures and mine, which you were so desirous to know : For what is past since our Marriage, you must ask her if she repents. Were she here I would not say what I am going, which is, that I have found a thousand new Charms in her since I possess'd her, and that she is all I could wish ; and I am still as passionate a Lover, and she the charming Fair that sweetens all my Hours of Life : I should be glad if her Father would act like one, and be reconcil'd ; but am no ways uneasy if he won't : If he leaves us any thing at his Death, I won't refuse it ; if not, the worst will be his own, my Wife's Merit and Love is Fortune enough. Ah ! why don't you say all these kind things in my hearing ? *said she, who stood behind him, clapping her Hands on his Eyes and kissing him* : Are you so near ? *said he* ; alas ! you know I dissemble, and don't think so well of you ; 'tis in hopes you'll die before me, and that these Ladies will recommend me to some great Fortune for a second Wife. This occasion'd some pleasant Raillery amongst the Company, and it growing late, Monsieur and Madam *de Terny* being oblig'd to sup at *Versailles*, took leave of the Company and went away.

Really, *said Madam de Contamine when they were gone*, mutual Constancy in Lovers is very laudable, and ever triumphs over all Obstacles when it has Reason and Vertue for its Basis. You know that by Experience,  
Madam,

Madam, said Monsieur du Puis, who just entered the Room, having been absent during their Discourse. A propos, said des Ronais, one of my Servants brought me word, Monsieur des Frans, that Monsieur de Jessy has been at my House to look for you; you promised Monsieur du Puis and me, an Account of his Adventures, and wish'd that Madam de Mongey might be present, and since she is not here, we shall be very glad to hear it. We cannot have a fitter Opportunity, said du Puis, it will entertain us till Supper, and Madam de Contamine shall have the pleasure to hear it. With all my Heart, said that Lady, Monsieur de Contamine will not return till 'tis late, from Madam de Cologny and my Mother-in-law, who is at her Country House, and I am not wanted at home till Supper. If that's all, said du Puis, I'll prevent that Trouble, for I order'd my Cousin to invite you all to Dinner on Monsieur des Ronais's Account, and now I'll invite you all to Supper on my own, and send to let Monsieur de Contamine know where you are: Madam de Mongey shall stay and lie with my Cousin. Yes, I'll keep her, said the charming du Puis. Since all the Company are secured, and at leisure to hear it, said du Frans, I shall gratify your Desires: But beark ye, Friend, said he to Monsieur du Puis, this entertaining us will cost you some Uneasiness; won't Madam de Londé be displeas'd that you pass a whole Day without paying her a Visit? Don't let that trouble you, said he, you will see her to Night, for she is now with my Mother in her Chamber. Ah!



*said Madam de Contamine*, we are not obliged to you for the Treat or your Company, both are procured by your Mistress's being here. No, Madam, *said he*, my Mother shall treat you all; and my Mistress is come to oblige me with entertaining my generous Friends, who do us the Honour of accepting what we offer: I am to be married in a few Days, and then she shall invite you herself; and to prevent Supper being too late, pray *Monfieur de Frans* begin your Narrative.



*The*



*The Constant Lovers: Monsieur  
de JUSSY's and Madam de  
FENOUIL's History.*



Obey your Commands, *said* des  
Frans ; but before I enter on  
Monsieur *de Jussy's* History,  
which he himself related to me,  
'tis necessary that I inform you  
how our Acquaintance began :

Two Years ago I met him in *Portugal*, there  
our Friendship commenced, and we have ne-  
ver been asunder since till two Days ago, which  
are past since his Marriage. At our landing  
at *Rochel* he took a Certificate of the Day and  
Hour of his arrival in *France* from the Gover-  
nour of the Place ; from thence all the way to  
*Paris* we lay at what Places he thought fit,  
and staid for Letters, which he received at  
the Places we inn'd at, one every Night all the  
way on the Road till we came near *Paris* :  
The Reasons of all this I was then a Stran-  
ger to, and my Curiosity was great to know  
the meaning of this mysterious Conduct of his ;  
but I forbore to ask him any Questions, not  
thinking it proper to dive farther into my  
Friend's Secrets than he thought fit ; but the

Day before he enter'd *Paris* he acquainted me with all, and fully satisfy'd my Curiosity : We arrived at *Bourg la Reine* at seven a-clock in the Morning, when I press'd him to go into *Paris* with me, and not stop there ; but then he told me his Reasons why he must wait there some time, and beg'd me not to leave him till he had disclosed his Mind, and engag'd me to continue the Friendship we had contracted, by trusting me with the Secrets of his Life past ; which he did in Words to this purpose.

Since we are now, *said he*, almost at our Journey's End, before we part it is but reasonable, as a return for the Honour you have done me in keeping me company these two Years past, that I acquaint you with the secret Reasons for which I then left my native Country, and let you into the Occurrences of my life past, and then you will no more wonder at the Precaution I have now taken at my return, in taking Certificates and waiting for Letters on the way : Know then that all the Happiness of my Life has depended on the Constancy and Fidelity of a Woman, a Wife I mean. I have observ'd in all the Conversations you and I have had together, that you have a very ill Opinion of the Fair Sex, and hope now to convince you that there are Women who even out-do us in Resolution and Constancy, and who will bravely suffer the utmost Extremity, rather than yield to break their Faith when given.

I was born in *Paris*, the Son of an eminent City-Attorney ; but he having many Children,

dren, when he and my Mother died, the Fortune they left divided among us, was not sufficient to provide for and support us, equal to the Port we had hitherto carried : My Brothers and I took to the Law, as being the genteelest Employ : I study'd with great Application, and had pretty good Success, so that without Vanity I believe I should have been eminent in that Profession had I pursued it ; but Love threw such Obstacles in my way, as oblig'd me to quit both that and my Country. My Person and Humour you are perfectly acquainted withal, the World was so kind as to think them not disagreeable ; but Heaven gave me a Voice little inferior to any in the World, and I attain'd such Skill in Musick as was answerable to it : This was the means that introduc'd me to Monsieur *de Ivonne's* Acquaintance, and gave me Access to his House.

This Gentleman had several Children, and among the rest a Son of my own age, with whom I was intimately acquainted : They had a great Estate, and my Family was far inferior to theirs. Monsieur *de Ivonne* was Guardian to a young Lady who was his Neice, an Heiress, who had a vast Fortune, and lived in the House : Monsieur *de Ivonne* managed all her Estate, and bred her up in the same manner as he did his own Children, except in Habit and Retinue, in which she excell'd his Daughter. This Lady being the Heroine of all my Adventures, 'tis necessary that I give you the Description of her Person at the time I first saw her, which is above eight Years since,



since ; she is now but twenty-five, yet there is no question but she is much alter'd.

Mademoiselle *Fenouil* was tall and well shaped, graceful and easy ; she was fair as *Venus*, her Hair and Eyes were black as Jet, but her Eyes were so bright, so sweet, so killing, that no Heart could resist their Glances ; her Face was oval, and every Feature soft, and charming *Cupids* sat in the Dimples of her Cheeks ; her Frowns darted Despair into the Lover's Breast, but her Smiles fired and chear'd their Souls : In fine, she was the most lovely amongst Womankind. This is her Picture, and you need no other Excuse to justify my loving her, since I have told you what she was. And that her inside was as lovely as her Person : Her Soul was noble, sincere, generous and firm, an Enemy to flattery and hypocrisy, disinterested, brave, capable of the boldest Undertakings, and as resolute in the executing what she resolved ; she was learn'd above her Sex, skill'd in all Histories both sacred and profane ; all the Poets antient and modern were perfectly understood by her ; nay, she knew almost all the Sciences, even Astrology, but this served only as an Amusement to her : all the vast Stock of Knowledge she possess'd, she made use of on proper Occasions ; which, join'd with an incomparable Vivacity and Wit which she was blest withal, render'd her the Delight of all our Sex, and Envy of her own. She was born a Satyrist and Critick ; she danced and sung to Perfection : In fine, she was all that was charming, and wanted no Accomplishment to make

make her a Miracle of Wit and Beauty. She was just seventeen when I first saw her and had the Honour to be introduced to her Acquaintance : Her Cousin one day told her, he had a Friend that sung as well as any Man living, she desired him to get me to visit there that she might hear me sing ; he gave me an Invitation to hear her, and it being natural for People who love the same Art and Science to desire to see one another, I readily accepted the Offer and went home with him that very Evening ; there the charming Maid received me kindly, and made no difficulty to let me hear her heavenly Voice ; she sung so finely that I even blush'd to sing after her, and grew doubtful of my own Performance, yet I dared not to refuse, but did my best ; and she applauded and seem'd pleased, and bid me come again ; nay desired that I would improve our Acquaintance, and bring her all the new Songs I cou'd get to teach her, that we might sing them together. Ravish'd with the pleasing Proposition, I fail'd not to obey ; and there was not a Day pass'd in which I did not visit her on this Pretext.

We made an Opera-House of Monsieur de Ivonne's, nothing but Musick and Singing was to be heard, and all the Opera Songs were there perform'd with such Skill and Voices that the Neighbourhood rung of us. Thus we pass'd four whole Months, whilst love insensibly stole into both our Souls, and I was made her Slave before I was aware.

It was impossible but in all that time we must have been left some Moments alone : I  
soon

156      *The* ILLUSTRIOUS

soon grew uneasy, and nicely watch'd her Looks and Actions, and found I was not indifferent to her ; but, on reflection, dared not disclose my Passion, lest she should banish me her Presence, there was so great a Disproportion between us as to point of Fortune, that I could not hope to be heard. All the Songs I taught her inspired only Love : I composed Verses complaining of my mournful State, telling I loved but dared not to declare my Flame ; but she regardless sung them all as well as I, and with no kind Concern. At last I resolved to speak so plain, that it should be impossible for her not to understand me ; so I made the following Verses and gave them to her with the Tune, which admirably corresponded to the Words, which were these. Here he read them to me, *said des Frans*, as I will to you.

S O N G.

**O**N you alone my Eyes are fix'd, 'tis they  
     *Speak all my tortur'd love-sick Soul does feel,*  
 Which I no other way dare to reveal ;  
 Yet you're insensible of all they say.

*My Voice, my Eyes, do all inspire Love,*  
 'Tis Love does every Tune and Verse compose ;  
 But Love, that me in tuneful Notes disclose,  
 With you, for Songs do pass ; and cannot move.

On reading these Verses, *said he*, she blush'd, and ask'd who made them ? It was I Madam, *said he*, and I made both the Tune  
 and

and Song for a young Lady with whom I am very much in love. I look'd on her earnestly as I spake, and perceiv'd she understood me; she immediately fung the Song better than I could, which I interpreted to my Advantage: And now I was impatient to make her explain her Thoughts in her turn, and began to believe that a Declaration from my Mouth would be as kindly received as my Song; but yet I ventur'd not to push things too far at that Instant, but waited a favourable Opportunity; mean time a Marriage was propos'd to me, which did me a greater Service than all I could have said.

My Friends had found a very good Match for me, a young Gentlewoman no elder than Mademoiselle *Fenoil*, very handsome, well-bred, and rich; the little likelihood there was of my succeeding with her I loved, made me incline to hearken to this Proposal, and really the Lady deserved a better Husband, and was a better Match than I could ever hope for. These, Madam, *said des Frans* to Madam de Mongey, were the very Expressions Monsieur *des Jussy* spoke of you in. But you shall hear the rest: Mademoiselle *Fenoil*, *said he*, was inform'd of all, and got a Sight of Mademoiselle *Grandet*, who was the Person design'd for me; her Beauty alarm'd her, and she forgot all Considerations when she heard that the Marriage-Articles were ready for signing. I had been two Days absent from her, and the third, which was the Day fix'd for signing the Writings, I received this Note from



from her early in the Morning, containing these words :

**D**on't be too hasty in marrying ; you will in the End repent of it : There is a Person in the World a Match for you much preferable to that now proposed to you. Let me see you immediately, I wait your coming.

I went, hoping to be back time enough to meet my Friends, as agreed : I found her alone in her Chamber very pensive, her Eyes swollen with crying : I come, Madam, said I, to receive your Commands, and to know what Fate you design me, and who the Person is you propose for a Wife to me. She blush'd at this Question : Before I tell you, Sir, said she, it is fit I should know if you really love the Lady that you are going to marry ? and whether it be Inclination or Interest that guides your Choice ? It is not Love I assure you, Madam, said I, for should I follow my Inclinations, I should never marry Mademoiselle Grandet ; I confess she is a very charming Woman, but, alas ! my Heart was pre-engaged before I saw her, and I passionately love another, whose high Birth, Merit, and Fortune, are so far above what I can pretend to, that my Reason enjoins me to be for ever silent, and abandon my self to Despair ; and since I can never hope to possess what my Soul adores, I resolved to throw my self into the Arms of another, in hopes that Absence may cure my sick Soul of a vain Passion, and restore my Quiet : My Friends have put me  
into

into the Way to effect this Design ; I accept the Offer for these Reasons : the Conversation of an agreeable Wife, the Duties of my Profession, the Care of a Family, and the Impossibility of ever having her I love, will doubtless cure me ; if not, I shall find repose in Death, which is preferable to what I have suffer'd under the rigorous Silence Reason has forced me to keep since I have loved.

For whom do you thus suffer ? *said she with much Earnestness and Disorder.* Under the Circumstances I now am in, *said I*, charming Tormenter, it is impossible for me to dissemble ; (*then falling at her Feet*) my Eyes and every Action, and the Confusion I am in when I approach you, must needs have long since inform'd you, that 'tis you who have captivated my Soul, and inspired me with a Passion to which I was a Stranger till I was blest with a Sight of you : Yes, Madam, *said I embracing her Knees*, 'tis you I adore ; nor have I failed in the Respect I owe you, since my Tongue never presum'd, till now, to tell you that I love ; nay, I would have died silent, had not your Commands obliged me to declare the Secret.

It is an heroick Resolution you have taken up, *said she smiling* ; you love me, and yet consent to marry another, and for no other Reason but because you love me. Yes, *answer'd I*, my Despair puts me on this desperate Expedient, and forces me to throw myself into the Arms of another, since I never can possess you. And why do you thus despair ? *said she.* Oh Heavens ! *said I*, Madam,

dam, what Grounds have I to hope? the vast Disproportion of our Circumstances, your Merit, and my own Unworthiness, have set me so far below you, that it were a Crime for me to wish that you should ever be so lost as to be mine. If you love me as you profess to do, *said she*, why should you fear to hope? Love is a Leveller, and equals Kings and Swains: Who forbids Hope to the aspiring Lover? since no Obstacles remain but difference of Family and Fortune, those are at my dispose; my Fortune, when I come of Age, is mine to give; and if I make you my Husband, you will then be my Superior; by Birth we are Equals, since you are a Gentleman: And since *Madam Grandet*, whose Family, tho not so rich, is nobler than mine, thinks you worthy of her Choice, I have no reason to refuse you: And now, to put you out of pain, I give you my Hand and Faith to make you Master of my Person and Fortune so soon as I am of age to do it: My Nobility is owing only to the great Employments my Father was possess'd of at his Death, you may hereafter purchase such, since I can furnish you the Means to do it: My Uncle is my Guardian to manage my Fortune during my Minority, but has no right to dispose of my Person; it is not long ere I shall be at liberty to receive my own Revenues, and dispose of my self. And now tell me, is not the Offer I make you much more advantageous than that your Friends have procured you? and had you not better take what you love, than her you care not for? How blest am I, *said he*, to hear you

you make this generous Proposal, and yet must acknowledge that I am unworthy of you, and that 'tis pity you should condescend to make so mean a Choice ; tho I have all the grateful Sentiments of the Obligation, and a Passion for you so sincere and ardent, that it may supply the Want of Titles and a Fortune. 'Tis enough, *said she*, I ask nothing but your Heart. Alas ! Madam, *said he*, I tremble at the Thoughts of what Persecutions you will suffer : All your Family will oppose my Happiness ; nay, 'tis possible, time and their Persuasions may make you banish me and make some worthier Choice, and leave me the most wretched of all Mankind. Trust me, *said she*, I am arm'd for all Events ; time will pacify my Family, and when they find me resolute, they'll cease to importune me ; and they cannot force me from you : Besides, you may engage me to be true, and rid your self of all your Fears ; 'tis in your Power to put it out of mine to change. At these words she blush'd and turn'd away, saying, go break off the Treaty with Madam *Grandet* this Hour, and in a manner so publick that I may be secured from all Fears of your ever being reconciled, and whatever Injury you sustain by it, be assur'd I will make you ample Amends ; make haste, the Hour is near when you must meet your Friends : See not my Face again till you have executed my Commands ; but on your Life expose me not, nor declare the Reasons of your acting thus, 'tis enough that you satisfy my Desires, and the world must not be inform'd of the Secret, it is your Interest to leave



leave me no Cause of future Jealousy. I go, *said he*, Madam, to break off this Match in so publick a manner, that you shall be convinced how ardently I love you; nor shall the Fear of angering all my Family and Friends, whom I am certain will be highly incensed, or the ill Consequences that may arrive to me from the Indignation and keen Resentments of the Lady whom I must affront on no just Pretence, deter me: I will expose my self with pleasure to every thing Man can fear, to convince you all things else beside your Love and Hate are indifferent to me, and that I cannot live without the first, or wish to survive the last one moment; and this Night, either by Letter or from my own Mouth, you shall have an exact Account of my Proceedure. Go, *said she*, and let me have that Satisfaction as soon as possible. I obey'd, *said he*, and left her, much distracted in my Thoughts, my Invention being on the rack how to find a Pretence to get quit of Madam Grandet, without appearing to be the Aggressor, and so to avoid the blame of so unaccountable an Action. Full of these Thoughts I went to Madam Grandet's, where my Friends and hers were met together; she look'd like an Angel, and I could not but inwardly regret the loss of so charming a Creature, whom I had already secured, for one whom I had a thousand Reasons to fear I should never possess quietly; but Love silenced Reason, and I only made her a Bow at entering the Room; and seeing her modestly draw back towards a Window, I went and stood by her, leaving the Mar-

Marriage-Articles and all Business to be adjusted by our Friends, hoping to find some Opportunity to fall out with her, in our private Conversation, without being overheard by the Company: I first broke silence, and told her very uncivilly, that I did not like her Dress; that I thought she was too extravagant in her Habit; and that a Woman that was desirous to please none but her Husband, need not dress so splendidly. She answer'd me with great Modesty, that it was her Mother's Pleasure to keep her so, and that she thought she did not wear any thing extraordinary, or above her Fortune; that to this time, she had always study'd to conform herself to her Mother's Will; but that, after we were marry'd, I should be the Master of all, and if I found fault with any thing, she would alter it as I thought fit; and that she should be obedient to me in all things, and endeavour to please me in whatsoever I commanded her to do. This submissive Answer quite confounded me, *said he*; but I went on, rail'd against keeping Company, playing at Cards, going to Plays and all Diversions; nay I said all that the most brutish, jealous Fellow could invent; giving her to understand that if she marry'd me, she must expect nothing but to be extremely miserable for Life: At last I teased her so that she cry'd, I then ridicul'd her and farther provok'd her, till being no longer able to contain, she burst into a Passion, and told me, she was sorry at her Soul things were gone so far, and that after what I had now told her, she must confess she could not marry

marry me without great Reluctancy. I red-  
den'd, my Soul being fill'd with Remorse, and  
sensible that I was guilty of a great Crime, in  
treating a Lady thus, who was certainly one  
of the sweetest natur'd and best bred Women  
in the World, as she has shewn in her beha-  
viour since with the Man she marry'd, who  
has now, Heaven be prais'd, left her a Wi-  
dow: with him she suffer'd all that a Woman  
could endure, with a Man who was even more  
jealous and brutal than I feign'd my self to be.  
I was convinced that she was Mistress of every  
good Quality that is necessary in a Wife to make  
her Husband happy, but being resolved to  
quit her, I did not slip the Advantage her  
words gave me. You shall not marry me  
with Reluctancy, Madam, *said I, in a louder*  
*Tone than before,* I won't marry any Woman  
against her Inclination, and therefore our  
Treaty on that Score is at an End: It is need-  
less, my Friends, *said I,* for you to trouble  
your selves any farther about the Articles be-  
tween this Lady and I, we are not born for  
one another; she quits me with Joy, and I  
leave her without Regret.

At these Words they were all surpriz'd, ha-  
ving heard no other part of our Discourse,  
and concluded the poor abused Lady, had  
said some very unkind things to me. They  
would fain have brought us to a farther Ex-  
planation of what had past, and endeavour'd  
to stop me, but I would not stay; but plain-  
ly told them the Lady had declared she could  
not marry me but with regret, and that I  
scorn'd to make use of her Parents Authority

to make her unhappy, and thought it my Duty to leave her at liberty to chuse for her self: So bowing I took leave and went away.

The poor Lady was strictly question'd about what past between us, and ingenuously told them every Word; but none that knew me could credit what she said: I had acted so unlike my self and so like a brute, that her Mother was violently angry with her; and indeed it was so very unlikely that I should refuse such an Offer, that every body concluded she was in the Fault: In fine, her Friends were so incens'd against her that she, to free herself from their Persecution, about a Year after marry'd one Monsieur *de Mongey*, a Man of good Birth and great Fortune, a Country Gentleman, who at first sight fell in love with her, and soon obtain'd her of her Friends: He was, without dispute, one of the most disagreeable and worst bred Men on Earth, old and jealous; and she suffer'd a kind of Martyrdom for four Years space and upwards, and this, *said he*, she owes to me, which I am very sorry for: and Madam *Fenouil* has given me this Relation in her Letters, in a Style that plainly shews she was equally concern'd for her, and lamented the Misfortunes of this innocent Victim to our Passion; but her Husband is, thank Heaven, dead, and has left her childless, very rich, and she is now as good as a Maid again. But let us return to our Story, *said he*, she has too much reason to think ill of and hate me.

I did not, *said Monsieur des Frans*, addressing himself to Madam *de Mongey*, interrupt Monsieur



Monfieur *de Juffy* in his Story, to inform him that I had the Honour to know you, but let him proceed. Hereafter you fhall know more, in order to which I fhall keep on my Tale.

After this fine Exploit, *faid he*, I fled to my Miftrefs, to acquaint her with my Proceedings; and tho ſhe blamed me for wronging ſo ſweet a Lady, yet when I aſſured her I could find no other Expedient to get quit of her, ſhe excuſed me, and was pleaſed with my Conduct.

Seven or eight Days afterward I gave her Hints, that I did not quit ſo good an Offer but on the Aſſurance of being ſecured of a better. She ſoon underſtood me, and ſaw I fear'd her breaking her Promiſe. At laſt I told her, that tho I doubted not but ſhe would continue conſtant and love me ever, yet her Uncle's Threats, Perſuaſions and Arts, might oblige or force her from me; that Ambition, great Offers, and the like, might prevail; and in fine, that I might have the laſt Security ſhe had ſeem'd to promiſe me. At laſt, tho with much Difficulty, I prevail'd; and we drew up on each ſide a Promiſe of Marriage in form, which having ſign'd we ſolemnly ſwore to keep and perform; this done we ratify'd it, and from that Hour lived as Man and Wife, tho ſecretly.

I do not believe, *faid he*, there is on Earth a greater Pleaſure than ſuch an Amour: We paſt ſix Months undiscover'd, ſleeping whole Nights together: And theſe, *faid he*, were the only happy Moments I have known in  
Life,

Life, and yet were the sole Cause of all the Misfortunes that have since befallen me.

She became big with Child, which broke all our Measures ; and her Uncle at the same time was treating about a great Match for her, a Man of such Quality and Fortune that all her Friends approved of it ; it was not her Fortune that he valued, but her Person : He was a Man of great Quality, very handsome, witty, generous, greatly esteem'd, and, in a word, every way accomplish'd, and there was nothing to object against him ; yet it was impossible for her to accept the Offer, which extremely pleased me, tho I dreaded the Discovery. I leave you to judge, *said he*, the Trouble we were in ; she was very young, and we were both unexperienc'd in such Matters, yet we thought we had nothing to fear but the Noise it would make in the World, and her Uncle's Resentments and the rest of her Family, and that we thought a Trifle ; but, alas ! that was enough, as it proved in the End. I would have persuaded her to let some Persons we knew had an Influence over her Uncle, break the Matter to him ; but she was so overwhelm'd with Grief that she was deaf to all Reason, and told me I must resolve to fly with her to some other Part of the World, where, being out of his reach, we might better make her Peace : That we had Money sufficient to carry us out of *France*, and support us till she was of Age : That I must take her away, and that she was ready to follow me to any Place in the World ; and since we were both alike criminal, we ought to share

share one Fate. I confess I trembled, *said* *he*, at this Proposal : I told her it was the certain Way to ruin us, and bring me to a shameful End ; that I being six Years elder than she, and her Inferior in Circumstances, I should be accused of inticing her away, and a Rape : That if we were stopt on the Road, the least she could expect, was to be shut up for her life in a Convent, and I to finish mine by the Hands of an Executioner : That getting Children was a Crime not punishable with Death ; but stealing an Heiress was never pardon'd. But she reproached me with want of Courage and Affection, vow'd she wou'd poison herself if I delay'd or refused to follow her Advice, and to terrify me more, ran to a Cabinet and fetch'd a Paper of Arsenick which she had provided for that fatal Purpose ; I forced it from her, and threw it into the Fire ; but she with a forced Smile told me she had more, and was determin'd to prevent her Shame by Death, if I was so barbarous as to keep her there to be exposed. I urged all that was possible to dissuade her from so horrid a Deed, as the destroying her self and the innocent Infant ; but all in vain : so that I yielded to all she proposed, tho my boding Soul and Reason told me what would follow. We fix'd on the next Morning for our Flight, having resolved to go directly to *Lions*, and from thence to *Avignon*. According to Appointment I found her the next Morning at the Place agreed upon : She had no Person with her but her Woman, whom she could confide in ; being unprovided of a Coach or

H ses

Horses, we were fain to hire one, the first we could get, and we went seventeen Leagues from *Paris* securely, and as we thought undiscover'd ; but on the third Day in the Morning we were stopt. Madam *Fenouil* being miss'd, had put all the Family into the utmost Confusion ; no body could tell what was become of her : They search'd all *Paris* for her, and at last found which Road we had taken, and so pursued and took us when we were in Bed together. I made all the Resistance I was able, having snatch'd my Sword from the Bed's-head as they enter'd the Chamber, but was forced to yield, being master'd by Numbers. I was most inhumanly used by my Enemies, but was less sensible of my own Misfortunes than hers : the Agony I saw her in, her Shrieks and Cry's pierced my Soul ; nor was I less concern'd for the dear Pledge of our mutual Affection that she went withal. It was one of her nearest Relations who seiz'd her, and used her very unhandsomely, basely upbraiding her with what he call'd a Crime, but was in my Eyes the noblest Condescension and Proof of her generous Love to me ; and tho my Soul was fill'd with Rage, yet I used Entreaties to prevail with him to use her gently, desiring him to do all his Rage could inspire to me, so that he would spare her. I said a thousand things to this Purpose, but was unregarded by these unmerciful Wretches.

Nor was she less concern'd for me : They vision'd me like a Thief, and treated me like the vilest Criminal, tho she cried out I was her Husband, and bid them shew their Au-

I

thority



thority for using us thus, and why they parted us, or punish'd me for a Crime which she alone was guilty of.

We were carried back to *Paris*, where I was thrown into a Prison, and she refusing to go back to *d'Ivonne's* was put into the Hands of a Magistrate, to secure her. A Process was immediately drawn against me, in which I was accused of a Rape, and seducing her, as I foresaw. I made the best Defence that was possible, and, knowing she would not be offended, I produced all her Letters, and made it evident that she had done all by her own Consent and Desire. Notwithstanding all this my Enemies prevailed, and I saw the Cause was like to be carried against me; but she, as she had promised, did all she could to save me; her Relations Threats and Promises could not prevail with her, but she came to the Court at my Trial, and in the Face of the Judges threw her Arms about my Neck, shedding a Flood of Tears, asking me Pardon for being the Cause of all I now suffer'd, and solemnly protested that she would never abandon me: I will rather die, *said she*; and you know I fear not Death; and whatever Sentence they pass on you, I will share, and not survive you one Hour. Then she fell on her Knees before the Judges, and besought them in the most moving Terms to give her to me, who was her Husband, recounting all that had past between us on account of her Flight, and how she forced us to it by threatening to poison herself: In fine, she pleaded with such Vehemency and Tenderness, that I was so sensi-

sensibly touch'd with the Sense of what she suffer'd, and Gratitude, that I could no longer support my Misfortunes, but fell down in a Swoon, and came not to my self till they had removed me out of the Court. I found my self laid on a Bed, where I was inform'd, that the Judges being melted with what they saw, and being convinced how inveterate my Adversaries were, and that it was a malicious Prosecution, tho they could not acquit me by reason of the Rigour of the Laws, the Fact being plain as to my getting her with Child, and endeavouring to carry her out of the Kingdom, yet they moderated the Sentence, and ordain'd that Madam Fenouil should be put into the Hands of her Relations, or a Convent, till she was of Age; and that I should be banish'd France for seven Years, from the Day of my leaving it; which Time exactly agreed with her being of Age, which would be fourteen Days before the Term of my Banishment expired, and then she might dispose of herself. I was condemn'd to take care of the Child, and in a considerable Sum to her, which she acquitted me of in spite of all her Relations: Our Promise of Marriage was declared null; and so the Suit ended.

She was shortly after brought-to-bed of a Son who is still living, and whom you will see with his dear Mother in an Hour's time, I hope. So I was set at liberty; and having taken Measures for to keep a Correspondence, by means of a faithful Friend, who received and sent our Letters to one another, I left

*Paris*, without having the Satisfaction of seeing her from that fatal Day that we were before the Judges. I past the Time of my Banishment in *Holland, Spain, Flanders*, and *Italy*, except the two last Years, which I spent in *Portugal*. I took a Certificate in my true Name at my leaving *France*, and one at my entering it again, to prevent my Enemies from any Dispute. Having been absent from *France* seven Years and eight Days, ere I set Foot in it again, and above a Month more since I went out of *Paris*, which I will not enter till Madam *Fenouil* thinks fit : she will be here at nine a-clock, for I received a long Letter from her last night, with an Account of all that has past since my Absence, and I am therefore able to inform you of every Transaction, as well as if I had been present all the time. Her lying-in being over, she being then in her nineteenth Year, she went into a Convent, where she lived three Years; after which she went and lived at her Uncle's, as before, where she never mention'd my Name, or seem'd to make any Inquiry about me ; nor did any body speak of me before her. She often went privately to see the Child, and lived so retired, and behaved herself so prudently, that People ceased to speak of, or almost remember our Adventure, and our corresponding by Letter was not so much as suspected ; so that all being in a manner forgotten, several Offers were made her of marrying, and she was courted by a Man of great Quality and Fortune, who, tho he knew the Slip she had made, yet loved her passionately ;  
and

and she was obliged publickly to declare, that she would never marry, to put an End to his and other Gentlemen's Importunities : She made this Declaration a little before the News of my being dead was spread abroad, which Report we thought proper to raise, that she might be more at liberty, and live more at ease. Having a very extraordinary Opportunity to countenance this Rumour, I chang'd my Name at my leaving *France*, and assumed that of *St. Cergue*, by which you knew me, *said he*, till we came to *Roche*, where first I told you my Name was *de Jussy*. When I was in *Spain*, at *Madrid* I accidentally met with a young Man named *de Jussy*, born in *Paris* ; he neither belonged to the Ambassador, nor was a Merchant, but, like me, was travelling for his Pleasure : I ask'd him about his Family, but could not discover that he was any Kin to me, so I did not discover to him my true Name ; but because he was a Stranger there, and my Countryman, I thought myself obliged to give him some good Advice, perceiving he was very debauch'd, in a Country where Jealousy reigns, and where Husbands think Murder a just Revenge for the Injury a Man does their Honour in being familiar with their Wives or Daughters : I caution'd him often, but in vain ; he was very extravagant, and supported his Expence by the means of some Lady, who made him Presents, a thing very common in that Country ; and at my return from a short Voyage I had made, I was inform'd that he was kill'd, being assassinated by Bravoës, and murder'd by Persons unknown.



known. So I got some of the Ambassador's Attendants to write to my Relations, to inform them that I was dead, and made them inclose the Certificate of his Death and Burial from the Priest that bury'd him; and this confirm'd my Relations, past all doubt, of my being dead. At the same time I writ to Madam Fenouil, and sent her the Packet inclosed to send to my Brother. I sent these Letters by a Merchant, to deliver into *du Val's* Hands, our Correspondent, who prudently ingaged the Merchant to carry the enclosed Letters to my Brother, pretending he had some Difference with him himself. The Merchant went, and my Brother question'd him about my Death, of which he could give no other Account but, that all the *French* People at *Madrid* said such a young Gentleman was kill'd there, whose Name was *de Fusly*, and born in *Paris*: My Brother put on Mourning, had Masses said for my Soul, and bewail'd my Death like an affectionate Friend and Brother. Madam Fenouil sent me word that he has been very careful of my Son as if it had been his own, for which I will give him thanks to-morrow. He writ to *Madrid* to the Ambassador, who confirm'd the truth of this Report by his Answer. In fine, *d'Ivonne* and every body at *Paris* believed me dead, except my Mistress and *du Val*, and what a surprize will they be in to see me again in perfect health. My Plot had the desired Effect, for *d'Ivonne* troubled his Niece no more; my Friends made me no more returns of Money, nor did I need it, for I had more by me than I had occasion for.

My

My Mistress was now Mistress of her Fortune, and received the Income of it, which she did not spend the tenth Part of, keeping only one Foot-boy and the same Waiting-maid that had been privy to our Amour, whom she had taken again in spite of her Uncle : And my Dear had sent me more Money than I knew what to do withal ; so that I had employ'd a great deal in buying Shares in several Vessels, by which I have been a considerable Gainer, and have brought it all in Bills of Exchange, into which I converted all my Money, as the most safe and easy way to bring it. I have from time to time inform'd her of all my Proceedings, and done nothing without her Approbation : It is a Year and half since I writ to desire her to remit me no more Money ; but to use some of that she had by her to furnish a House, in order to my return. This she did in this manner : She pretended to be displeased, and put away her Woman, who, with *du Val*, went and took a very fine House in the Suburbs of the City far off *d'Ivonne's* ; my Mistress furnishing Money, they furnished it handsomly ; nay they have, as she sends me word, hired Servants ; so that I shall find Domesticks who are Strangers to those they belong to ; and that she will meet me in my own Coach this Morning. And now, *said he*, may I not boast that I have found a constant Woman, whom seven long Years Absence, the Persuasions and Threats of all her Family, and the Importunities of Lovers far more noble and agreeable than my self, could not prevail with to break her

Vows to me? And now neither the Laws nor the Family can hinder me from being happy, we have nothing left to do but to get marry'd without any Noise, to legitimate our Child and silence the World.

This, Sir, is the Sum of what you desired me to inform you of, and the complete History of my Life and Misfortunes, *said Monsieur de Jussy*, and I desire one Favour of you, which is, that you will here wait my Mistress's arrival, and not leave us till we have finish'd our romantick Adventures by marrying, in which you may be of great service to us as a Friend and Witness. These Reasons obliged me not to make more haste to *Paris*, it being necessary I should wait for her Letters on the Way: So I told him I should now be very desirous to do what he ask'd, and that I would assist him to the utmost of my Power; that I now forgave him the ill Treatment he had given *Madam Grandet*, and I hope, *Madam*, you will pardon him, *said he to that Lady*, I assure you *Madam Fenoil* writ the finest things of you, during *Monsieur de Jussy's* Exile, whilst you were *Monsieur de Mongey's* Wife, and speaks of you with the greatest Respect and Friendship imaginable; and they are both ready to ask your Pardon, and make you publick Satisfaction. I am fully satisfy'd already, *said that charming Lady*, and shall gladly receive a Visit from them and return it, and I rejoice at their Union; but proceed with your Story. Why, *said Monsieur des Frans*, I told *Monsieur de Jussy* that I longed to see his Mistress, whom he represented to be

be so great a Prodigy of Constancy, in an Age when I did not think there had been one Woman that was faithful and just to her word, and you shall hereafter know, *said he*, the Reason I have to think so ill of the Fair Sex, and then you will not blame me for being so severe in my Censures of them. What you say is very obliging, *said Madam de Contamine, taking him up short*, and in our presence, this is the way to make your court to us : I assure you. Oh ! Ladies, *said he*, excuse me ; I do not rank you in the Number of false Women : You I esteem as Angels, and Miracles of Virtue and Goodness : You *Madam de Contamine*, have convinced the World of your Virtue ; but forgive a sick Man that complains, to-morrow you shall know my Story, and I will convince you that I have been one of the most injured and most unhappy Men breathing ; but to Day we will finish *Monfieur de Fussy's* Story.

As he and I were thus chatting, we heard a Coach enter the Inn-gate, we look'd out and saw that it was a very fine new Coach with four fine Horses, and three Footmen in new grey Liveries ; there came out of the Coach a Gentleman, a Child, and a Lady, magnificently drest, with a Maid-servant very genteel and agreeable ; I guess'd the Lady to be *Madam Fenouil*, and was soon convinced it was so by seeing *Monfieur de Fussy's* Disorder, who flew down to the Coach, and catching the Child up in his Arms ran up Stairs follow'd by the Lady ; he gave the Child to me at his entering the Room, and running back to the



Door, received her in his Arms in the greatest Transport imaginable ; there could not be a more moving Sight than the meeting of these Lovers : They remain'd at least a quarter of an Hour clasped in one another's Arms, unable to speak, the Tears gush'd from their Eyes, and they both sunk down into a Chair in a Swoon ; recovering from their Trance they renew'd their Embraces, and fearing they should relapse into the same Weakness, I interposed ; they were scarce able to speak, so intirely had Joy took Possession of their Souls that all their Faculties were overpower'd ; and no wonder, for what Pleasure can equal that of two such Lovers, when they meet again after so long a time as seven Years Absence ? the Proofs of mutual Constancy that they had given each other having increased their Affection, and the Pains endured endear'd them more to one another : They now seem'd to triumph over Fortune, and received the Satisfaction their own Virtue had procured them.

And now *de Fussy* turn'd to embrace his faithful Friend and Servant *du Val*, whose Services had doubly endear'd him to him ; mean time I saluted the Lady, and had the Pleasure of seeing a Face which charm'd me : The Lover and Mistress ask'd one another a thousand Questions, which I interrupted by calling for Breakfast, which my Valet and *de Fussy's*, being call'd, brought in ; then the Lady's Servants were call'd up to wait at Table, before whom nothing was talk'd of that ought not ; *du Val* only told them that

was their Master and Lady, and she said before them, to Monsieur *de Jussy* in the way of Discourse, that she had not been out of the Convent he left her in till that Morning, to come and meet him ; and that Monsieur *du Val* had taken the Trouble to hire and provide these Servants, and a House ; for, *said she*, you being absent, I kept no House ; but chose rather to live in a Convent retired till your return. Breakfast ended, and the Servants gone, the Lovers, *du Val*, her Woman, and I, held a Counsel what to do next : And at last, *du Val's* Opinion was approved of, which was, that he having brought with him the Certificates of both their Ages and Baptisms, as also the Child's, with a Copy of the Sentence of their Separation, which were sufficient to prove her being of Age, and the time of his Banishment being expired, nothing remain'd but to get a Petition drawn up to the Archbishop of *Paris* relating the Matters of Fact, and to beg his Permission to let them be married in private, to prevent further Troubles and Scandals, and that as soon as possible, and to let it be this very Day, said *du Val*. We all applauded his Proposal, and it was resolved we should set out for *Paris* immediately, so we went to *de Jussy's* new House, from whence I came, *said Monsieur des Frans* to Monsieur des Ronais, when I met you ; and, having shifted at your House, I return'd thither, and could not acquaint you whither I was going because I had promised to kept all secret ; and I remain'd there till yesterday Noon, when I came back to you.

I was no sooner arrived at Monsieur *de Fussy's* but *du Val* came in with a Publick-Notary, to whom the Certificates were all shewn, and he approved of the Petition, and drew one up in Form, which Monsieur *de Fussy* and Madam *Fenouil* sign'd; after which we went with it to the Bishop, and return'd in less than an Hour with an Order from him, giving them leave to celebrate their Marriage in whatever Church they thought fit in this Diocess; with an Order to all Priests or Curates, ordaining that any one of them, being desired so to do, should perform the Ceremony; and the good Notary had brought a Curate along with him who was his Relation, whose Parish was about a small League from *Paris*, who offer'd his Service whenever they pleased. It was impossible that *d'Ivonne* could get Knowledge of any thing that pass'd, or where his Niece was, and to prevent all Disputes, it was resolved that we should go to this Village that Night, and that they should be there married before Day in form. The Notary and Curate supp'd with us, being caution'd to say nothing of the Matter before the Servants till there was nothing left to fear. After Supper we set out in two Coaches for the Village, where being arrived, Monsieur *de Fussy* acquainted his Domesticks with his true Name and Circumstance in relation to their Lady, and concluded with telling them that they must be Witnesses to his Marriage, and that at their return to *Paris*, they might report it to whom they pleas'd. The honest Servants seem'd so glad at their Master's trusting them with

with his Secrets, that they declar'd they would sooner die than suffer any Injury to be done him or their Lady. And now we past the remaining Hours very agreeably till the Clock had struck one, drinking the Bride and Bridegroom's Health ; then we all enter'd the Church with four of the best of the Inhabitants of the Parish, and saw the Marriage perform'd, and the Child legitimated : Monsieur *de Fussy* took a Certificate of both, to which we all sign'd, and having had a splendid Treat, return'd to *Paris*, where the Curate and Notary took leave, but I lay at Monsieur *de Fussy's*. We lay a-bed till Noon the next Day, when *du Val* call'd me up, and we went and visited the happy Couple in Bed, after which they rose, and being at Dinner it was resolved, that their Marriage should be made known to *d'Ivonne* and their Relations, in the most publick manner, which was done on *Tuesday* Night in this manner.

Madam *de Fussy* took her Coach after Dinner, and went to her Uncle's, who was extremely surprized at her Habit and Equipage, because she had for a long time gone dress'd like a Widow. He ask'd her where she had been ever since the Morning of the Day before. She made him no Answer, but shewing the Certificate of her Age said, Sir, being now of Age to dispose of my self and Fortune, I am retired to live Mistress of my self ; I have taken a House and Servants, and am come to beg a Favour of you, my Aunt, and Cousins, which is, that you would honour me with your Companies to-night to sup with me. Never

was



was any Man more surprized than he at this Answer: She told him she would send a Footman to conduct them to her House if they pleased to come, and so took leave. Mean time the Footmen had told *d'Ivonne's* Servants that their Lady had been marry'd that Morning, but not to whom, nor were they able to guess, the Report of *Monfieur de Fussy's* Death making it impossible; this was a Riddle they could not unfold. *D'Ivonne*, tho' intirely at a loss what to think, resolved to go with his Family, and accordingly went, conducted by the Servant she sent. *Monfieur de Fussy* had sent for his two Brothers, and two particular Friends, and his Lady had sent for some of hers; so that they found us a round Company, for there was fourteen of us before *d'Ivonne* and his Wife enter'd the Room with their Son and Daughter.

Their surprize was redoubled when they saw so much Company; the Parlor we were in was very fine, nothing was wanting to make it neat and handsome. *Monfieur de Fussy* did not yet appear, but Madam entertain'd the Company; Supper was set upon the Table, and every one seating themselves there was a general Silence, and I could scarce forbear laughing to see how *d'Ivonne* and his Family look'd on one another. Madam *de Fussy* placed herself next me, the Child next *du Val*, and there was a Place left between her and the Child empty, where a Plate and Chair remain'd as for the Master of the House. At last she broke Silence, turning to the Footman behind her; Go, said she, and tell your  
Master

## French LOVERS. 183

Master that we wait his coming. He is just sealing a Letter, *said he*, Madam. This the more confounded *d'Ivonne* and his Wife, who sat on Thorns. At last Monsieur *de Jussy* enter'd with a Lacquey before him carrying a large Wax-Light ; he had no Hat on, but appear'd as at home ; but dress'd so magnificently that I my self was surprized, all having been provided against his coming. I beg your Pardon, *said he*, for making you wait. *D'Ivonne* and his Wife knowing him, shriek'd out. You see, *said he*, I am come to Life again, and return'd to *Paris* to my Wife, and desire our meeting may be friendly : I shall forget what is past, and am ready to become a sincere Friend to you and yours. They said not a word, but immediately fled from the Table, and would not stay tho all the Company press'd them to it : their Daughter follow'd ; but the Son being an honest, good-natur'd Youth staid Supper, and was very merry, applauding his Cousin's Resolution and Conduct, and promised to use all his Interest with his Father to make up the Differences between them amicably, in relation to the Accounts between them during Madam *de Jussy's* Minority. We supped plentifully, sung and danced all night, so that I went to Bed as tired as if I had rid Post for a Week, and left the Bride and Bridegroom a-bed when I came to you, *said he* to des Ronais ; to-morrow Morning I must pay them a Visit, and then if you please, Messieurs *des Ronais* and *du Puis* to go with me, you shall see them ; after which, if Madam *de Mongey* will give  
leave,

leave, and receive a Visit from them, I will ingage that she will be perfectly reconciled to Monsieur *de Fussy* and his ingaging Lady : The Gentlemen accepted the Offer, and agreed to go with him the next Morning.

I am much inclin'd to love Madam *de Fussy*, said Madam de Contamine, her Conduct since, has expiated her Fault, and has render'd her more worthy our Esteem tho not our Imitation ; I will intercede with Madam *de Mongey* to pardon them. I have already forgot all Resentments, said the beautiful Widow. Were I assured of that, said des Frans, I would bring them hither to-morrow. Madam *de Mongey*, said Madam du Puis, is Sincerity it self, doubt not that Oracle ; and if you bring them not, you will disoblige Madam *de Contamine* and me ; we long to see these extraordinary Persons ; two such Lovers who could love for seven long Years without the Sight of one another, said she looking on Monsieur des Ronais, and not fall out, or suspect one another's Truth and Constancy, prodigious ! Your Malice is not quite extinguished, my charming Mistress said he ; 'tis just I should suffer a little, tho pardon'd. It is not *de Fussy*, said des Frans, that I so much admire, Men are generally constant, 'tis the Lady is the Wonder, for nothing is more rare than such a Woman. You will be banish'd the Conversation of our Sex, said Madam de Contamine, for your malicious Censures of us : We all applaud Monsieur *de Fussy*, and blame Monsieur *du Puis*, here, for his Amours : We cannot look without Horror on Monsieur *des Prez*, who has so basely

basely abandon'd the poor Madam *de l'Epine*, whom we all knew : We condemn the guilty, and applaud the virtuous of either Sex, without partiality ; but we condemn not in the general. Have you done Madam ? *said Monsieur du Puis*, your Ladyship is an incomparable Judge, we confess ; but when you know my Story, perhaps you will not blame me so much ; as for Monsieur *des Prez*, he rather deserves your pity than blame, and you your self, if the truth were known to you, would be of my Opinion. Will you inform us of it, Sir, *answer'd Madam des Mongey*, you know we were Pensioners together in the same Convent, and I must own the manner of her Death has made me look on him with Abhorrence, and I should be glad to hear his Vindication, since I take him to be a very honest Gentleman in all things else. With all my Heart, Madam, *said he*, and, if the Company are willing, I will this Hour satisfy them all of his Innocence. They all desired him to proceed, when Madam *de Londé* enter'd the Parlor, and Monsieur *du Puis* rose to receive her, and all the Company got up to salute her : Well, Madam, *said he*, have I at last gain'd my Suit ? Yes, *said she smiling*, your Cousin, whom I have left in your Mother's Chamber, has so wrought with her, that he has persuaded you to make me happy, *said he*. Then it is in our Mistresses Power, *said des Ronais*, to make us both so when they please. By my consent, *said des Frans*, you shall be both Couples marry'd on the same Day, that you may not envy one another's good Fortune. We'll talk of this, *said*



said *Madam de Londé*, another Day ; mean time, *Madam* your Mother being unable to rise, sends me to you all, Ladies and Gentlemen, to desire you to sup in her Chamber ; she already is so good as to treat me as her Daughter, that is, without Compliment ; for which I think my self highly obliged to her, perhaps she had something to say to her Kinsman, and so sent me away ; but no matter. They all went up to the good Lady's Chamber, they placed themselves in a Semi-Circle by her Bed-side ; but *Madam de Contamine* and the old Lady's Niece, having given a Wink to *Monfieur des Frans*, stood together some Minutes in a Corner of the Room discoursing very earnestly ; their Conversation lasted a pretty while, at which *Monfieur des Ronais* appear'd much disturb'd : the Subject of their Discourse we shall hereafter declare ; but *Madam de Contamine* rallied him very wittily about his Uneasiness. They supp'd merrily, they ridicul'd Jealousy, and insensibly fell on the Subject of *Monfieur des Prez*. *Madam de Londé* said, she had heard only a confused Account of that Story, and seem'd desirous to know it fully ; her Lover staid not for farther Intreaties, but after Supper entertain'd her and the Company with it, beginning in these Terms.

*The End of the First Book.*

BOOK



## B O O K II.

*The History of Monsieur des  
PREZ and Mademoiselle de  
l'Epine: Or, The Cruel Fa-  
ther and Mother.*

**A**Bout two Years since, being re-  
turn'd from a Voyage which I had  
made, for some Affairs depending  
before the Council, which obliged  
me to follow the King, I learn'd  
that the eldest Mademoiselle *de l'Epine* was  
dead, not three Months since, in a very de-  
plorable manner; whom I was very sorry for,  
altho I had no particular Acquaintance with  
her, because she was one of the handsomest  
and most accomplish'd young Ladys in all the  
Neighbourhood. Every body cried out against  
*des Prez*, and did relate a thousand Cruelties  
that he did to her; and I have been told so  
much, that tho I could scarce believe it pos-  
sible to be all true, yet I could not but con-  
demn

demn him in Part, and think him quite another Man than what I took him for. He was not at *Paris* when I came there, and did not come thither till three Months after, and as we had been always great Friends together, I went first to see him, and found him so chang'd, that is, he look'd so pale and weak, that I thought he was just recover'd of some great Indisposition: when I enter'd his Chamber, I found him seated by a Table, with his Head leaning on his Hand; the Noise I made in entering roused him out of a profound Melancholy, in which he seem'd even lost in Thought; he rose, and then I spoke to him. I saw a Letter that was open lying upon the Table, writ, as it seem'd to me, by a Woman's Hand. We embrac'd one another, and I made him some Compliments on his Recovery, and seem'd to partake of his Grief, doing what I could to comfort him. The Wound is here, my dear Friend, *said he, laying his Hand on his Heart*, and I shall never recover it; the Tears at the same Instant came into his Eyes; then he took the Paper that lay on the Table, kiss'd it, and put it into a Purse, which he wore in his Bosom, as if it had been a sacred Relick. There I likewise perceived hanging on the same String *Mademoiselle de l'Epine's* Picture; then he fell a sighing, talk'd so distractedly, and seem'd so disorder'd in his Senses, that I could not but pity the Condition I saw he was in; and being curious to know the truth of things, and to divert his Grief, I said to him: This Letter should not have been given to you just on  
your

your Recovery from so great an Illness, as I imagine you must have had, and whilst you were so weak, they did ill who did it ; for if I am not much deceived, it is the Occasion of that Grief which at present overwhelms you. I have not been sick, *said he*, nor is it this Letter that augments my Grief, it only serves to feed it. I think I know the Hand, *said I*, and that it is Mademoiselle *de l'Epine's* writing. You are not deceived, *said he*, it is her Hand indeed. Why she cannot write to you now, *I replied*, since she is dead as all the World says. She is indeed, *said he*, I wish to God she were not so, I should not be here ; but tho she is dead to the rest of the World, she still lives in my Breast. At these Words his Grief revived, and the big Drops fell from his Eyes, and his Sighs redoubled, which made me conclude that there were some Particularities in this Affair between him and this Lady, which were not known to those who had related the Story to me. Wherefore I pursued my Discourse and said, Why does the Death of this young Lady concern you so much now, since you abandon'd her whilst she was living? I abandon her! *said he lifting up his Hands and Eyes*, My God ! is it possible that any body can invent such a Falshood ! 'Tis what the world believes, *said I*. What the world thinks I value not, *said he* ; but that you, who knew me so well should credit such a Story surprises me, ought not you to have justified me ? But all things conspire, *said I*, against you, and every Circumstance condemns you in appearance. 'Tis true, *said he*, the  
World



world has been deceived, and I care not ; but I am desirous to disabuse you, because I cannot bear that you should think so ill of me, altho' the little Esteem you have on this Occasion shewn for me might dispense me from it.

I will give you a hearing when you please, *said I*. We are not in a proper Place for it, *he answer'd* ; but let us take a walk together, and as we walk I'll tell you all. I took the Opportunity of the Offer, and went into my Coach and drove towards *Vincennes* ; all the way thither he scarce spoke three Words, but sigh'd deeply. So soon as we were off the Stones in the plain Road, out of the Noise of the Town, I began to intreat him to begin his relation, but could not get two Words from him together ; but when we came to the Wood he bid the Coach stop, and did alight without saying any thing to me, I follow'd him ; then he desired me to bid the Servants wait there, and so we went aside into one of the privatest Walks, where we were sure not to be interrupted or overheard, and then he began his relation in these words :

There needs nothing more, *said he*, to remove all those false Impressions out of your Mind which publick Report has occasion'd, but to give you a faithful Recital of all that has past between this unfortunate Lady and myself, and then you will know my Innocence and her Misfortunes, who was really and truly my lawful Wife, and I shall likewise inform you of the Reasons why I have just Cause to lament all my Life long, that I have innocently

cently been the Cause of her Death: You know that I am unfortunately (for so I may term it) the only Son of a Man very potent, and a great Lawyer; for had he been a meaner Person, and had less Interest and Authority, I had not been what I now am, that is, the most miserable Man on Earth.

*Mary Magdelaine de l'Epine*, whom you did know, was the eldest of three Daughters and one Son, which her Father left at his Death in their Mother's Care; he was by Birth an *Italian*, of a good Family, but not rich; he came into *France* with Cardinal *Mazarine*, who gave him an Employ in *France* as long as he lived, so that his Widow was left to take care of the whole Family and all his Affairs, amongst which she had a vexatious Law-suit which was the Cause of all my Misfortunes; it has lasted a long time, and is not yet terminated, tho it ought to have been ended long since in justice and equity; my Father can do a great deal towards it in the definitive Sentence that is expected to be given at the next hearing. Madam *de l'Epine* lived near my Father's, and came often to sollicite him to help her in this Affair; she had very powerful Recommendations to him, but if I had been a Judge the most powerful Advocate of all would have been her lovely Daughter who accompany'd her, you have seen her; she was very fair, and had the finest light-brown Hair that Eyes could behold; her Face was oval; her Eyes blue, bright and shining; her Look was sprightly and engaging; her Voice was sweet and had the Art of persuading

suading whenever she spoke ; every Motion was charming, and her behaviour in every thing she did and said, inspired Love and gain'd Affection ; yet in her Face you might read that she was not much inclin'd to sensual Pleasures : As for her Soul, it was so great and noble that she did merit all that a Woman could even wish for, and deserved even a Prince rather than a Subject ; she was sincere, ingenuous, liberal, capable of keeping a Secret or Engagement even to Death ; fruitful in Invention, fearful and considerate in making Resolutions, but bold and resolute in executing them when made ; she was disinterested, a good Friend, and a faithful Mistress ; she was so far from being ambitious that I have heard her say a thousand times, that if she might have her Choice, she would prefer an humble quiet Life, before a Life of pomp and greatness, which cannot be obtain'd but at the Expence of one's Sincerity and Peace. She was very obliging to me always, because she loved me ; but she was naturally too plain a Speaker, and I have often seen her do those things, which no other worldly Consideration could have made her do, except her Love to me, only because she knew that it obliged me ; she was without Reserve, and passionately fond of me, without Injury to her Modesty ; and I have often seen her receive me in her Arms, and court my Embraces, when at the same time I knew, that in her Soul she had no manner of Inclination but only to oblige me. In a word, she was the most accomplished Mistress and Wife that ever Man could possess or Imagination form.

I first saw her in a Parlour where my Father used to give Audience to his Clients, her Mother and she waited his coming out of his Closet; I was enchanted with her Beauty, but did not perceive I was fallen in love; but out of Civility I offer'd to introduce her to the Speech of my Father, so I took her by the Hand and led her into the Closet to him, and said to him, Sir, the two Ladies I here present to you have waited a great while, and I thought they ought to be distinguish'd from others, they appear such as merit the Preference, and, if my Recommendation can be of any Use, I beg that you will serve them. I went out, and Madam *de l'Epine* had time to say whatever she would, and staid above an Hour with him; I was there when they came out, as if it had been by Accident, and ask'd her if she was well satisfy'd. Yes, Sir, *said she*, and we are highly obliged to you; I have acquainted Monsieur your Father, with the Injuries and Injustice that has been done me, and I hope that ere long he will do me justice. I wish it lay in my Breast, Madam, *said he*, to do it for you, and it should be done this Hour. She then thank'd me and took leave: I perceived that her Daughter blush'd every time I look'd upon her, and turn'd away her Face from me when I fix'd my Eyes upon her. I sent one of my Footmen to watch, and give me notice when she and her Sisters were at their Door in the Evenings, and went often thither to them, and sometimes we went and walk'd in the Fields and Groves together, but I never was left alone with this young

K

Lady



Lady ; I was very well received there both by the Mother and Daughters, not only for the Service I had done, but for those I might do them.

When the time of the Year came that made it unfit for walking, I went there to spend the Evening in playing at Cards ; we did not play high, only a Trifle for our Diversion ; and for a Prétext for me to stay, and go thither every Night, I propos'd to form a little Society, which held for a great while ; after we agreed to play for a small matter and make a Bank, that we might have more Diversion, and change the Scene by a little Treat now and then, so we chose a Treasurer by a Majority of Voices, into whose Hands all the Money that was lost was to be deposited ; and then, when there was enough for a Treat, we were to take some little Journey of Pleasure, and spend it to every Body's Satisfaction.

My Proposal being thus approved of, eight of us agreed upon, who were the Players ; that is to say, the two eldest young Ladies *de l'Epine*, two very pretty young Ladies their Neighbours, and the four Lovers of these four Ladies, whom I have no need to name to you. We obliged our selves to come every Night, and it was agreed that Monsieur *de l'Epine*, who was but a Youth, should supply the Place of any one of us who happen'd to be absent, and that the Person whose Place he supplied should pay what he lost, and if he gain'd, double it. This was oppos'd by his Mother and Sisters ; but we made it pass. The Ladies were exempted from this Forfeit, and

and each of the Men were obliged to pay for his absent Mistress. We would all of us have made our Forfeits pretty high, but in that we were over-ruled by the Ladies; and as we had every one of us our particular Views, we seldom fail'd of coming, so that the Treasury would not have been greatly enrich'd by the Forfeits had they been greater; the Ladies were to forfeit nothing but Kisses; and Mademoiselle *Mary Magdelaine de l'Epine* was our Treasurer. Thus we play'd at Cards every Evening, and I endeavour'd all I could to speak to her alone, but in vain; and no Person could be more reserved than she was for four whole Months. She saw very well that I did not look on her with Indifference, and that some other Reason, and not my Inclination to Gaming, drew me thither; but she so carefully avoided giving me an Opportunity of speaking to her alone, that she never learn'd the Truth from my own Mouth. We look'd into our Treasury on the Feast of *St. Martin*, and tho we had not play'd high, yet we found we had Money enough to make a handsome Treat; and having chosen our Company, we pass'd an Evening the most agreeably that ever I pass'd one in all my Life, and yet we did not spend all our Stock; and every body was so pleased that we all resolv'd to play on, that we might have a Bank to feast on *Christmas-Eve*, two or three times in the Holy-Days, and on *Twelfth-Day*, and to end the Festival with a fine Supper, and a great Ball, which we doubted not to effect if we went on, and very splendidly too. Thus our Society was

farther ingaged than ever, and our Forfeits increased.

Yet notwithstanding all my Affiduity, I advanced nothing in my Love-Affair, my Mistress was always in Company either with her Mother or Sisters all the Day, and in the Evenings the Company gave her Opportunity of avoiding me, without seeming to do it out of Design; so that at last, being resolved to declare my Passion, and know what I had to hope for from her, my Love being too excessive to permit me to continue in this Incertitude any longer, I writ this Letter.

Madam,

**Y**OU are too clear sighted not to perceive that I am distractedly in love with you; for tho I could never get an Opportunity to tell you so, my Eyes have inform'd you of the Secret: the Presence of so many Strangers and Friends with which you are perpetually attended, and the Pains I observe you always take to avoid being alone with me, have obliged me to keep silence hitherto, and forced me to make use of my Pen, to assure you that I love you passionately, and that all the Happiness of my Life depends on you. If you are not the most cruel of all the lovely Sex, you will no longer fly me; but give me an Opportunity to throw my self at your Feet, hear my Complaints, and, at least, pity the languishing

des P R E Z.

P. S. The Felicity of my Life depends upon your Answer.

I put this Letter into her Hand, much afraid she would return it unopen'd, because she seem'd in some disorder; but she slip'd it into her Pocket blushing, without looking upon me; and I observed that she was not so gay, or play'd at Cards so briskly as she us'd to do, this Evening. I return'd the next Day, and placed my self next her at play, she pretended to let fall something, and in stooping to take it up drop'd a Letter into my Coat-pocket, which I was so impatient to read that I rose from the Table immediately, and desired Madam her Mother to play for me, whilst I stept into another Room and read it. It contain'd nothing but only an Appointment for me to meet her the next Morning at the holy Chapel, whilst her Mother was gone to the Palace, or Hall, with her Lawyer about her Process. I return'd to play, transported that our Amour should begin with a Rendez-vous, the thing I most wish'd for, and I fail'd not the Appointment; she came some Minutes after me, and the last Mass being ended, which was begun when we enter'd, we staid till the Crowd was gone, then I approached her: Well, Madam, *said I softly*, shall I know my Destiny this happy Moment? *Am I to be happy or wretched?* I cannot tell, *said she*, but my Soul presages no good to us if you continue to pursue me, and my Reason would persuade me to desire you to come no more where I am, that I may never look upon you again. These are very unkind Thoughts, Madam, *said I*, and I beg you'd entertain no such, but rather consult your Heart whether I



am altogether indifferent to you, and if you can resolve to see me no more. Alas ! *said she*, I made such Resolutions last Night, nay I came forth this Morning with this Design ; but Compassion, or something more powerful, pleads in your favour, and I find my self inclin'd to continue our Friendship if you will desire nothing more ; for tho you are not indifferent to me, yet I hope I shall never forget my Duty so much as to do any thing contrary to my Mother's liking, who must dispose of me as she pleases ; therefore I must not love you without her leave. At these words she seem'd much disorder'd, and I was so transported with Joy that I could not refrain from seizing and kissing her Hand notwithstanding the Place was altogether improper, and I felt a Joy of which I was never sensible before : Reflecting that we should be observed, I persuaded her to go with me to a Bookseller's just by, who knew me ; there we retired into his Parlour, and talk'd freely ; and she at last confest ingenuously that she had loved me from the first Moment that she saw me, and hoped I would not esteem her less for making this Confession, she blush'd, and the Tears drop'd from her Eyes. I was in Raptures, and made her a thousand Vows and Protections of Affection ; and indeed I was charm'd beyond Expression with her Sincerity, and I made her own that she came with her Mother to my Father's only to have the Sight of me, and that she was drawn insensibly by her Passion to seek my Company ; in fine, that neither Ambition, nor any other mean Consideration,

tion, had induced her to love me ; but that it was purely the Work of Heaven. I said all the tender things imaginable, to convince her that I loved her to excess, and to express my Gratitude. Alas ! *said she*, I believe all you say, we both love, and both confess it, yet I fear we are not born for one another ; for tho I am of a good Family, yet it does not equal yours, your Fortune excels mine a hundred times, and believe me, should you presume to offer any thing that was not honourable, I should scorn and detest you : These are the cruel Reasons that persuade me it is absolutely necessary for me to see you no more. For otherwise I can see no means by which our continuing this unhappy Affection can have a fortunate End for either of us ; for you, because you will lose more advantageous Offers, and incur your Family's Displeasure ; and for me, because the whole World is sensible that I am not a fit Match for you, and will therefore misconstrue your Visits to me much to my disadvantage, and so at least, if it be without prejudicing my Virtue, it will blast my Reputation, and I shall dearly pay for the Pleasure I take in seeing you. I answer'd, that I had consider'd all this before ; but that I had resolved to love on : That tho it was true that we could not hope that we could be publicly marry'd, and live happily during my Father's life-time, yet, as I was of age, we might be marry'd privately ; and that it was permitted us to love and enjoy one another's Company with Virtue and Innocence ; that I should find Priests enough to marry us if she would con-

sent; and that if it was discover'd, other Countries would afford us a Retreat to fly to, till my Father's Rage was past. To all this she gave no other Answer, but shook her Head and cry'd, all these are vain Chimera's, and that she would never consent to a Marriage that would expose me to my Father's Displeasure, and drive me out of *France*, which perhaps, *said she*, he may find means to do \*; or supposing we can find an Ecclesiastick so bold as to marry us, when it shall be discover'd it will be declar'd clandestine and annull'd, and you will be taken from me, and I can hope for nothing else but to be shut up in a Convent for the rest of my Days, disgrac'd and ruin'd; without doubt you your self will then despise and hate me for procuring these Misfortunes to both, and shewing so little Affection for you as to consent to your Ruin: Possession will put an End to Desire; and this last Misfortune I dread more than all the rest; your Love is all I covet on Earth, and I would rather suffer Death than live bereft of your Affection; Beauty will fade, and Time changes both the Face and Mind; and how insupportable would it be for me to hear that you were marry'd to, and fond of another, when I was shut for ever from your Sight, and my ruin'd Children left unregarded. This touch'd me to the Soul, I was so charm'd with her Sense, that I could not but admire the Justness of her Reasoning:

---

\* The Laws of France are extremely severe against all clandestine Marriages, and quite different from ours.

I said all that Man could to remove her Fears, I wiped away her Tears, vow'd eternal Love and Constancy, and seal'd those Vows upon her Lips, yet I could not persuade her to lay those Scruples aside; I found love pleaded for me in her Breast, but Reason govern'd. We at last went into the Shop, and her Mother passing by, it being in her way as she went home, found us together; and suspecting nothing seem'd pleased, saying, Sir, I have met with you very fortunately, for I have Occasion for your Assistance. I presently assur'd her I was intirely at her Service. Then she ask'd me if I did not know a Gentleman whom she named: I told her yes, he was one of my particular Friends, and that I believed he would do me any Service. Then she told me that it depended only upon him to let her receive some Money that was due to her; for he had seiz'd the Money and Effects of a Man who was indebted to her, and had paid the rest of the Creditors and himself, and would not pay her tho there was Money enough remaining in his Hands, nay more; that he had made this Seizure only to prevent her having her Debt: I presently went along with her to my Friend, who immediately, on my speaking, did all she desired: So she received her Money, return'd me thanks, and I waited upon her and her fair Daughter home.

I went thither again at Night, according to custom, and then my Mistress appear'd very pensive and melancholy, so that some of the Company ask'd her what was the Matter, and if she was not well? She said she was



well in health ; but indeed she and I had been in a Bookseller's Shop in the Morning, where we had read a Story of two Lovers whose fatal Love had cost them their Lives, which had made such an Impression on her Mind that she could not shake it off. I observed where she made the Application of this feign'd Story, and was concern'd at it ; I writ to her about it the next Day, but received no Answer ; and I could not prevail with her to give me any other Meeting, tho I importuned her perpetually, nor could I get a Line from her. This vex'd me, but I comforted my self with observing that she constrain'd herself to act thus unkindly, and only strove to conquer her Passion, which I doubted not would get the Mastery at last. We pass'd the Midnight-mass together at *Christmas*, with our little Society, and were very merry : *New-year's-day* came, and I gave New-year's gifts to all the Company, on purpose to have a Pretext to give her one ; so I presented Snuff-boxes, sweet Gloves, Ribbons, Prayer-books, and such slight Toys to the rest ; but I did not only give her a Pair of Gloves in publick, but I afterwards sent her a very fine Striking Gold Watch, with a Letter in which I mention'd nothing of Love, because I knew it would be seen by the rest of the Family : I only told her, *That finding that there were Disputes very often about the Time of Night, no body being willing to quit the Cards, the whole Society being desirous to promote the publick Good ; and that as our Watches did not agree, I thought it best that hers should al-*  
ways

ways be the Oracle that should determine our Differences, being assured that there was not one of us but would be proud of submitting to her in any thing in whom all the Society confided, and who was herself the Person to whom they entrusted the Direction of themselves and Fortunes. My Letter was publickly read to the Company, and they obliged her to keep the Watch (which she would have returned me) which was all I desired. So I writ her another Letter, in which I declared my Design in making this Assembly, *That it was not any liking that I had to Gaming, but only to have her Company: That I had sent her this Watch to put her in mind of me each Hour, since I thought of her continually, hoping she would at last fix the happy Minute when she would give me a Meeting again; which was what I earnestly desired: But I could not obtain this Favour of her as yet.* Twelfth-tide came, and we all supp'd together three times, between that and Candle-mass, yet I gain'd nothing of her; and tho I was vex'd at my ill Success, yet I still continued to believe she loved me, and her manner of treating me always, tho in publick, confirmed me in that Opinion; but now I met with new Troubles.

My Father began to be displeas'd at my continual Visits to Madam de l'Epine's; he said nothing during the Winter and Carnaval; but when he saw I continued to pass the Lent in the same manner, he grew fearful that the old Lady, whom he knew to be a very self-interested Woman, might draw me into some

Engage-

Engagements with her Daughter which he should not approve of, and therefore thought it Wisdom to prevent it.

He began to rally me; and seeing I continued my Visits, he at last forbid me going thither; but I did not obey him, and did not acquaint my Mistress nor her Mother with one word of what he had said to me: On which he took it in his Head, that the old Lady persuaded me against him; and so took a Prejudice to her, and had like to have served her a Lawyer's Trick; but he contented himself with only frightening her, for tho he was very passionate and hasty, yet he always shew'd himself a just Judge, and a Man of Integrity.

This Lady's Procurator surprized her extremely by telling her that my Father was displeas'd with her; she desired to know for what, for as she was certain that all our Actions were very innocent, she could not possibly imagine the Cause of his Discontent. She told me of this in the Evening, and I too well knew the Cause, but I did not think fit to discover it to her. The next Morning she came to my Father's, to desire me to introduce her to him, being wholly ignorant of his Thoughts; for her Daughter and I had always behaved our selves with so much Reservedness, being never alone together, that no body could suspect any thing; but I did not desire that they should meet, so I told her my Father was lock'd up in his Closet about some Affairs of great importance which would keep him there a long time, and that I desired

she would go home and wait my coming, for I would speak to him my self, and bring her word if she could see him any time that Day. She doubted not the truth of what I said, and so was going away ; but as I was waiting of her to the Gate, we met with my Father, unluckily, who was entering the House, having gone out of his Closet by a Pair of Back-stairs ; the Surprize I seem'd to be in confirm'd his Suspicions. Your Business is not with me, Madam, *said he*, I suppose. Excuse me, Sir, *said she*, I came with design to ask you in what —. And I also, *cry'd I*, *interrupting her*, —. If you, Madam, *said he*, would speak to me, I have time to hear you ; be pleas'd to go into my Closet, and I will tell you what I have to say to you. She follow'd him, and I remain'd behind more dead than alive, with fear.

I stole to the Closet-door, and there heard all the fatal Discourse : He spoke to her very civilly at first, and then in a higher Tone, as a Man that expected to be obey'd : I doubt not, Madam, *said he*, but that you and yours are as virtuous as you appear to be, and that your Conduct within doors is altogether agreeable to that you shew abroad ; and therefore I am surprized that you should entertain my Son every Day, contrary to my Commands which I have laid upon him ; and tho I do not put an ill Construction upon it, yet, believe me, the World will ; and it will prejudice your Daughter's Honour : Prevent it, I advise you, by banishing him your House ; and if e'er a one of your Daughters be so foolish,

as.



as to believe he designs honourable Love to her, and yields to his Desires, it will be the worse for her; for I promise that she shall repent it dearly: I hope nothing has past as yet but what is innocent; but the World begins to talk of it, and that ought to make you break off the Commerce, and not permit of his coming any more.

Never was any Person more surpriz'd than Madam *de l'Epine*; she was at first much enraged, but was forced to moderate her Passion because she had need of his Assistance. You have, Sir, said she, let me into a Secret of which I was before intirely ignorant; I do not know what draws your Son to my House, but I can safely swear, that if Monsieur *des Prez* has an Amour with either of my Daughters, I am a Stranger to it, and the Publick sees that abroad, that I could never discover or perceive in my own House. I had never permitted of his Visits there but in respect, as being your Son; and that I had reason to hope that he would continue to assist me, as he has already done, with you, in my Law-suit: He made a small Society for a little innocent Diversion at play, and that and no other Reason, I believe, drew him to my House so frequently; I am very sensible that ne'er a one of my Daughters can expect so rich and noble a Husband as he is, in a Country where Interest alone procures such Alliances; but I beg that you will believe, that I have bred them above doing any thing that is beneath themselves or dishonourable: And pray oblige me, Sir, with the knowledge of  
what

what the World says, and on which of my three Daughters the Odium is cast. Madam, *said he*, neither of them is particularly named, nor is their Virtue suspected; but his Assiduity and continual Resort to your House is censured. Then 'tis only Reports, without any particular Grounds, *said she*, that are spread abroad? which I will take care to put an End to: And from this Day I desire that Monsieur *des Prez*, your Son, will never more honour us with his Visits; I shall speak to him in such manner as shall convince you, that I have never coveted his Company with any View or Design that could disoblige or disquiet you. You have no need, Madam, *said he*, to make any noise, or act so as to give new Occasions of publick Discourse; 'tis enough that you privately desire him to refrain coming so frequently, otherwise the World will say that you forbid him out of Revenge, because it was taken notice of; act wisely and without Passion, 'tis enough that I believe you had no ill Design in entertaining him. She promised to do as he desired, and then she spoke to him about her Law-suit, and he promised his Assistance to the utmost, and perform'd that Promise that same Day; but as for this part of the Discourse I did not regard it, but left the Place in such Distraction that I knew not what to do. If I went to my Mistress I knew the Compliment her Mother would make me; and if I did not go, it would be the same thing as if I had already received the Affront; so I did not go till the next Day, when I had prepared a Letter for my Mistress,

and I gave it her unseen ; and these were the Contents of it.

Madam,

**Y**our Predictions begin to be verified, and the Promise I have made to you of Fidelity, will now be manifested to be true ; I know all your Mother has to say to me, which I rather chuse to hear than live a Day longer without a Sight of you ; which it is almost impossible for me to do : I have endured insupportable Torments since we parted, and am now resolved to brave my Destiny ; tho I am going to receive a Sentence worse than Death, yet the Pleasure of a Sight of you once more, will fully recompence all my Pains. How is my Soul distracted ! Why did I not see you Yesterday ? to arm you for this Shock, to beg you to conceal the tender Sentiments that you have for me, the only Thought that keeps me still alive. Yes, my Charmer, let us deceive the World, and out-wit my cruel Father ; seem indifferent, nay, even cruel to me ; govern your Looks and Tongue, hide your Concern at this sad News ; yet, alas ! I shall die upon the Spot, if I perceive not Love sparkling in your Eyes and glowing in your Face. Now, my Angel, private Assignations are necessary, now point me out some happy Place, where we may meet to sigh and weep on one another's Bosoms, where I may clasp and hold you to my throbbing Heart, and breathe my Grievs on your soft Breast ; not all the Fiends that plague the World, nothing but Death, shall keep

keep me from you: 'Tis not for me to prescribe the Time and Place to you; but I shall be at Mass to-morrow at the Minimes-Chapel, I will be there from eight to twelve at Noon; Oh! could you but meet me there, how blest you would make

The Miserable.

des P R E Z.

I gave her this Letter unperceived by any body, tho all the little Society were met, and sat down to play: I placed my self next her at the Table, every body there being beforehand apprized of the Harangue that was to be made to me. There was a kind of general Silence for some time, and at last Madam de l'Epine began her Speech in this manner: Sir, you would have deceived me, and have made me run the Risque of disobliging your Father Monsieur des Prez, which you are sensible I ought at this time to take care of; I know not the Motives of your acting thus, but I am too sensible that he is displeas'd with your coming so frequently to my House, for he has given me to understand that he is apprehensive of some ill Consequences from it; wherefore I believe that you will not take it amiss that I do all I can to prevent the procuring to my self so potent an Enemy; and altho you do me and mine a very great Honour by your Visits here, and more indeed than your Father thinks we merit, yet I must be obliged to entreat you not to repeat them: I should not perhaps have so much Condescension.



sion for his Commands if my Law-suit was decided, which I mention because you should be persuaded that it is much against my Inclination that I make you this Request ; it is not enough that our Conduct is altogether innocent, but we must give no room for Censure : This is the Doctrine I am to preach to you, my Daughters Reputation will smart by your coming hither, and this I ought to take care of above all things, because their Fortune depends upon it ; and therefore, Sir, you cannot blame me for what I do.

I am sensible, Madam, *said I*, that my Father has vex'd you, and am very sorry for it ; and that he has mention'd his idle Suspicion, which I would have concealed from you ; but since it is so, I will not be the Occasion of any Misfortune to you : The reason of my Visits here, was because I cannot find so agreeable and well-chosen a Company any where else, as our little Society is, and I know you are constrain'd to act thus, and therefore I shall ever be ready to serve you and yours on all Occasions ; but you must promise not to hate me for his Caprice, and that you even permit me to come sometimes to assure you of the Continuance of my Friendship, I will come so seldom that you shall receive no Prejudice by it. This was granted me, and thus I was in a manner banish'd this Lady's House ; but tho I could not see my Mistress every Day, yet my Love-Affair succeeded the better, and our Passion was augmented by this Constraint.

She fail'd not coming the next Morning to the *Minimes* Church, but staid no longer than

## French LOVERS.

211

to make an Appointment with me for the next Day, at a Church at the farthest part of the Suburbs, where we accordingly met, and walk'd for three Hours amongst the Tombs discoursing of our Misfortunes ; I told her, I found it impossible to live without her, and that if she did not take pity on me, and yield to what I was going to propose, she must expect to see me soon either dead or in a Convent: She seem'd sensibly touch'd. At last I propos'd to her, to be privately marry'd : As for what my Father can give me, *said I*, I care not ; the Estate left by my Mother, which I now possess, is enough to make us happy, our Meetings thus in publick Places will soon be taken notice of, and I cannot, in Consideration of your Reputation, carry you to any private Place, but, as my Wife ; a Chamber is the only fit Place for us to meet in, you may be known going in or out of the House, and nothing but your being my Wife can secure your Honour when it is discover'd : Make up your Resolutions, tho my Father can disinherit me, and drive me from your Mother's, yet my own Estate, my Heart and Hand, he cannot command, that shall be always yours. Alas ! *said she sighing*, how can I refuse to make you happy if my Honour can be secured, and I can with Innocence be yours ? A Priest, *said I*, shall make us lawfully one, and we will have none but such Witnesses as we think fit to share our Secret. She consented, the Tears stream'd from her Eyes : Happy or unhappy, *said she*, it is enough I shall be yours ; I am guided by a Passion of which I am not the Mistress :

Mistress ; give me no Cause to repent loving you, nor love me less for owning it and not dissembling. I clasp'd her in my Arms, and cry'd, No, my dear *Magdelaine*, you shall never repent of it ; I will get all things ready, and give you notice ; in the mean time you may secretly acquaint your Mother of our Design. Oh ! no, *said she*, I fear her above all things ; the fear of losing her Lawsuit, will make her sacrifice me and you to your Father, and I shall soon be clap'd up in a Convent. How then, *said I*, shall I get a Sight of you, or give you notice when all is ready, if no body be in our Interest ? I shall lose no time to make us happy ; who shall convey my Letters to your Hands, or yours to mine ? None but our selves, *said she* : The Morning you would write to me, pass by and make a Mark with Chalk on the Garden-wall, over-against my Closet-window, and I will leave it open all the Day, and take the Key of the Door in my Pocket ; so that in passing by at Night you may throw a Letter in, and I shall be sure to find it : And when I will give the Answer, the Pot of Flowers that stands in my Window, shall be placed on the outside ; seeing this Sign, be sure to be there at eleven a-clock that Night to receive my Letter, which I will throw out to you ; thus we shall not fear being betray'd, having no Confidants, and let this be as seldom as possible for fear of being observed : few People pass by at that Hour of the Night, and I will watch for you ; and by this means we shall hear from one another. This concluded on we parted, and I  
return'd

return'd home to my Father's, in whose Face I could read a malicious Satisfaction, but I took no notice ; and fearing lest he should have me watch'd, I was above eight Days without seeing or even writing to my Mistress, and yet I staid less at home than ever.

My Precautions proved very useful to me, for I was really dogg'd wherever I went, and Madam *de l'Epine* was acquainted with my Proceedings, which set her Mind at rest. I observed a Man to follow me several times in my way as I walk'd abroad, but I seem'd not to take any notice of it, but to wait to be better satisfy'd ; I began to suspect a little Lacquey who follow'd me, and under Pretence of doing an Errand I sent him to the *Jesuits-College*, and so soon as he was out of sight I threw my self into a Hackney-coach, seeming to hide my self ; I order'd the Coach to stop at the *Fauxbourg St. Germain*s, at the *Hotel des Mousquetaires*, where I had a Cousin-german lived ; I found him at home, and he told me he and some Company were going to dine at *Meudon*, and I should be welcome : I accepted the Offer, and I saw the Man who had follow'd me from a Tavern-door shew me to another, but I did not seem to perceive it. We went to the Place appointed, and spent the whole Day there very merrily. At my return home I saw the same Man follow us, and sometime after I saw the same Man who had shew'd me to the other, enter my Father's House, the same whom I had seen at the *Jesuits-College-gate* that Morning, and had a great mind to examine him ; but I thought



thought it best to say nothing ; so I only ask'd the Porter who that Man was. He said he did not know ; but that he came in the Morning about ten a-clock, and was admitted to speak to my Father ; who, after Dinner, not knowing where I was, went to visit Madam *de l'Epine*, whom he luckily found alone with all her three Daughters, who were all at work a making Tapestry.

This made me more circumspect than before, so I writ to my Mistress, that she might not be surprized at not seeing me so long, and at my not performing what I had promised ; and she gave me an Account in her Answer, of the surprizing Visit my Father had made them, thinking, doubtless, that we had been together : She recommended Secrecy to me, above all things ; and to take such Measures that we might have nothing to fear : The rest was only Assurances of a constant Affection, and a thousand things of the like Nature, which are Trifles in the Eyes of the World, but more valuable than Crowns and Empires to Lovers. I was very cautious the remainder of the *Lent*, and all *Easter* Holy-days, that is to say, for near two Months, and succeeded so well that all Suspicions were at an End, and I was no longer watch'd ; and now I resolved to execute my Design.

I had often seen a Man come to my Father's to write for his Secretary, who seem'd a Man fit to be trusted ; his Countenance pleased me, and I fancy'd he would serve me faithfully. I order'd him to be call'd to me, and, to find out his Temper and gain him, I order'd him

to write out some Love-letters which I composed, and charged him to be secret ; the next Day I got my self shew'd the way to his House ; I knew very well that he could not have done what I order'd, but I had a mind to see his House, and whether it suited my Design : I found it according to my Desire ; it was large and handsome, the Apartments were spacious and clean ; but what I liked above all was, that it was in a Part of the City very far from ours, and in a Place very private and little frequented ; I saw likewise a Bill on the Door for Lodgings to be let, which was what I wanted : He was surprized to see me, and the meanness of the Furniture shew'd the Indigence of his Condition. I sent for something for Breakfast, and made him eat with me ; and under Pretence of paying him for what he had already done I made him a small Present, which intirely ingaged him to my Service. This Man had a Wife, who seem'd not very scrupulous, and fit to manage an Intrigue ; so I resolv'd to first break the Matter to her. I left them fill'd with a great Opinion of my Generosity, as I found at my return, which was two Days after., when I saw him come soon in the Morning to my Father's, and so knew that he was not at home ; on which I went to his House, on pretence to see some Writings I had given him to do ; his Wife would have gone to look for him, but I hinder'd her and said, that not being in any haste I would stay and chat with her till he came ; so I again sent for a Breakfast, and made her eat with me, tho with some difficulty.

culty. I was doubtful of my Footman, therefore I sent him back to my Father's, to bid the Husband come to me. If this Woman had been either young or handsome I would not have done this, for fear of making her Husband jealous, but she was so much the reverse of both, that there was no Grounds for Censure; but she had Wit, and that was all I wanted. I talk'd at first to her about her Condition and Way of Life; and she made great Complaints of the Misery of the Times, that her Husband could now get little or nothing, and that they found it difficult to live. That is to say, *said I*, that if you could find a Way to get a great deal more, without running any great Risk, you would not refuse the Offer. No certainly, Sir, *said she with a Tone that convinced me she was in earnest*. Well then, *said I*, can you keep a Secret? Yes, *said she*, my Tongue never betray'd one. That is rare in a Woman, *said I laughing*; but, to be serious, if you are secret, and willing to oblige those who want your assistance, I will promise you a Present of Fifty *Louis-d'ors* so soon as the Affair is done, besides a Pension of twenty Crowns a Month for perhaps some Years, and you shall commit no Crime either against God or Man in doing it, there is nothing required but Secrecy.

I saw the Woman's Transport in her Eyes, and she swore to me, that if it were so I might open my self freely, without fear: So I made her swear that she would never discover what pass'd between us to any Person living,

living, whether she ingaged in the Affair or not ; and she has kept her Oaths, for my Father is ignorant to this very Day, that ever her Husband or she had any hand in the Matter. Then I declared to her, that it was my self that wanted their service ; and that I was passionately in love with a young Lady whom my Father would never give his consent to my marrying, because she was not rich, tho of a very good Family ; and that she loved me, but was too virtuous to yield to be my Mistress ; and that her Mother also would not consent to our marrying, because my Father would not ; wherefore we must be marry'd so secretly that no body might know it but those intrusted : she is under age, *said I*, but I am not : We must have a Lodging where we may meet when we find Opportunity, and this must be in a Place where none will betray us, because it will not only draw my Father's Anger on me, but it will be the Ruin of her and all her Family. This, *said I*, is what I propose to you, will you lend us your Assistance ? Have you well consider'd, Sir, *said she*, what you are going about ? As for your being married, it seems to me very difficult to get it done ; for what Curate in *Paris* is daring enough to do it without Licence ? and if you take one out of the Office, that will be worse ; for your Father will have word sent him of it immediately : As for a Lodging, that's easy to be had, 'tis you must take care of being surpriz'd or follow'd ; but how will the Lady's Mother be blinded not to take notice of her Daughter's Conduct ? how will she find Opportunities and Time to

L

come



come to these Rendezvouzes without being suspected? and can she conceal it from the World, if she proves with Child? and that will certainly happen where two People meet that love one another. You ask me very surprising Questions, *said I*: As for our Meetings, leave that to our Prudence. People in love, *said she*, have very little of that, generally. But we shall, *said I*; do not you concern your self about that, we have had so much hitherto that no body so much as suspects that we are Lovers. But if she proves with Child, Sir, *said she*, her Mother must at last know it. Yes, *said I*, she shall be inform'd of it in secret, and she may lie-in in the same Chamber in which we are used to meet, and may pretend a Journey into the Country, or to retire into a Convent for a Month or two, to excuse her being absent from home. As for that then, *said she*, we are agreed, and nothing remains a Difficulty but the Marriage, but that is indeed all. As for a Licence, *said I*, I will have nothing to do with it, that will discover all; nor a Parish Curate: I would have a Priest found, to marry us in private without a Licence, nor do we desire a Certificate from him; all we seek is, to be justify'd before God, and that our Consciences be at ease; we don't seek to satisfy the World. That Marriage, *said she*, will not stand if you are discover'd. I shall take care of that, *said I*, and she will trust that to my Fidelity. Very well, *said she*, deceive the poor Lady then; there are a hundred People to be found who will put on a Priest's Habit, and do the Deed.

Deed. I was surprized to hear her talk so vilely: I am not a Villain, *said I*, to cheat any Person; nor will I render my self hateful to God and Man, by abusing the sacred Ties of Matrimony; I will marry her according to the Laws of God, and be a kind and faithful Husband to her all the Days of my Life. You will do very well, *said she*, to act so honourably, and God will bless you for it, since you might with ease deceive her; and doubtless this Lady loves you well, that can put such Confidence in you; but will you love her always? Yes, *said I*, to my last Breath. Alas! *said she*, you are a Miracle; for two Months, or less is sufficient generally to cure Affection in Men; and these romantick Marriages, where Love is the only Consideration, seldom end happily. When you see my Mistress, *said I*, don't talk at this rate. Fear nothing, *said she laughing*, for I suppose all I can say to dissuade her from it will be to little Purpose; for a Lady that is in love, never consults any body but her own Heart, and her Lover. You are very skilful, *said I*, in these Affairs. That may be, *said she*, for I was once young my self. But are you disposed to serve me? *said I*. Yes, *said she*, with all my heart, tho I foresee the Dangers that I shall expose my self to by doing it. I swear to you, *said I*, a faithful and inviolable secrecy, and that whatsoever befalls my Wife or me, you shall never be named; nor any Person living know that you are any way concern'd in the Matter. I hope the best, *said she*, and I believe I have just now thought of a Priest that

will do the Business; I will look him out to-day, and you shall know to-morrow what we have agreed upon if you will but call here. I promised to do it, and as an Earnest of my Favour, I put ten Pistoles into her Hand to bind our Bargain, and ingage her to Secrecy, and went away much pleased, that I had found a Woman so fit for my Purpose.

I made known to my Mistress by a Letter that Night, what I had done, and begg'd a Meeting with her the next Day, that I might inform her of the Woman's Success, to whom I was to go at nine the next Morning. I accordingly went, and found the Husband at home, to whom the Woman had communicated all the Affair; and it was with great Difficulty that she and I gain'd him to consent to it. She told me she had spoke to the Priest, but that she had not agreed about any Particulars with him, till she had seen me again, and if I pleas'd she would now fetch him to me, for she could assure me of his Fidelity as to keeping the Secret, if he did not do what I desired; that she had not told him my Name, and I might chuse now to do it; that if he consented, it was all we wish'd, and it was well; if not, we were but where we were before: That he was very poor, but a very honest and good Man; so I sent for him to breakfast with us, having sent for some good Eatables, and the best Wine they could get. He came, we went together into a Chamber, the same I design'd to hire for my Use, and which did afterwards serve my Wife and I to meet in. I inform'd him of all, and believing

believing the best Argument was Money, I shew'd him my Purse, and told him the fifty *Louis-d'ors* that were in it were at his service, if he would do what I desired. He made a long Sermon to me of the Duty of Children to their Parents; and shew'd me the Evils that often befall those who were disobedient, running over all the Examples he could call to mind out of holy and profane History, so that I was tired to hear him; but at last we were call'd to breakfast, and I conducted him to the Table; and I believe he was not used to good eating, for he eat very greedily and heartily of every thing that was set before him; but did not drink more than three Glasses of Water just colour'd with Wine, so that I admired him; for I had never seen a Priest eat so much, and drink so little. After this he proceeded in his Sermon, setting forth the Duties of Husbands and Wives, and *St. Paul* was quoted on both Sides; for I gave him to understand that I was perfectly acquainted with the Duties of that State, and needed no Instructions; and I gave him the greatest Assurances of my Love, and the tender regard I had for her whom I desired to make my Wife. And thus I at last gain'd him to promise that he would marry us, and what was more, that he would venture to give us a Certificate, on Condition that we would do what he desired of us, to secure our Marriage from being broken; and that was, that we should sign a Writing which he would dictate, by which we should mutually promise, that in case of Need, we should, so



soon as it was in our Power, confirm by a publick Marriage, this perform'd in secret. In this Contract the Reasons were to be mention'd, why we did not marry in publick; and that we should bind this Promise by a true Confession and humble receiving the blessed Sacrament; and in putting this Writing into his Hands, we should swear to keep it firm and holy, in presence of those who should be Witnesses of our Marriage, who should also sign this Contract so soon as the Benediction was given, and before the Consummation of the Marriage; and that she should keep a Promise in form, seal'd up with my Seal, and sign'd by my Hand, from me; and I one from her in the same manner: And that I should acknowledge before a Publick-Notary, that that Paper, so seal'd up, did contain nothing but what I promised voluntarily, and did faithfully swear to keep religiously. All this I promised to do; and I was so far from being displeased with him for taking all these Precautions to keep us to our Duty, that it made me highly esteem him ever after; and I heartily thank'd him, and promis'd that I would make my Bride consent to do all he desired. All things thus agreed, we fix'd the next Morning to meet at nine a-clock in the same Chamber; and the more to ingage him to keep his Word, I presented him with a Part of what was in my Purse, and what remain'd, to my new Landlady, to buy some better Furniture for the Chamber, and not having enough I took her Husband home along with me, to give him more Money; giving him a  
great

great charge, that every thing that was handsome and necessary should be provided, fit for our Use, so that nothing might be wanting, and he took so good care that I found every thing to my mind the next Morning, and the Chamber was very finely furnish'd : and now I was in pain for nothing but only how to inform my Mistress of all, but she had taken care ; for as I was entring my Father's, I saw a poor Woman, who, in asking an Alms of me, shew'd me a Letter. I catch'd it out of her Hand, and soon saw these words : *Fail not to be at the Place where we met last, at three a-clock this Afternoon.* I knew my dear Magdelaine's Hand, and paid the Bearer handsomely ; nor did I fail to take Coach and to be at the Hour appointed at the Church, but was afraid I had lost my labour, because I found the Doors shut ; but turning my Head I saw my Mistress waiting in a Coach, who made me a Sign to stay : I waited for her at the Corner of a Street, and when she came up I told her that, if she would let me, I would conduct her to a Place where we might safely talk together as long as we pleased : She refused at first, but having told her where it was, she at last consented. We had each of us dismiss'd the Coaches that brought us, and I call'd another, which brought us to our new Lodging, where one of the Children giving me the Key, we went up into our Chamber ; where being enter'd I embraced her, saying, Now, my dearest, I hope we shall soon be one another's, you are now in that fortunate Place where I hope to possess you : Yes, my

Angel, said I, *throwing my self at her Feet*, 'tis here that I hope to become the happiest Man on Earth. Rise, said *she*, *letting fall some Tears*, I would do every thing to make you happy, but I fear it will prove a cruel Catastrophe to me in the End : Alas ! why did Fate make our Circumstances so vastly different, since Heaven has join'd our Hearts ; I foresee that in striving to make you happy, I shall undo us both.

I endeavour'd to dissipate these Fears and fatal Presages out of her Mind, but in vain ; and it is certain that she had always a Fore-sight of the Misfortunes that afterwards befel her, and of the deplorable Condition I should be left in, as I now am and shall be for the rest of my Days, that is, the most wretched of Mankind. At these words the Tears came into his Eyes, and it was with Pain that he continued his Relation.

I inform'd her of all I had done, and how I had also promised some things for her ; and beg'd her to tell me whether I had exceeded her Orders in so doing, and if she was displeas'd that I had gone so far. She answer'd, that she had nothing more to say, but that she would do whatever I would have her ; and that she would not fail to be in the same Place again the next Day, to meet me. She said she was so impatient when she received my Letter of the Night before, that she would have come to me then had she known how ; and having writ the Note I received, she gave it to a poor Woman to give into my own Hands, with a Promise to reward her well when

when she brought the Answer, as she accordingly did. I then ask'd her how she got out to come to me ; she bid me not trouble my self about that, she should always find Means to get to me. Does your Mother, *said I*, then give leave to you to go where you please ? She never constrain'd me as yet, *said she* : I would not willingly have her know what we are now about to do, but when it is done, she may be inform'd ; you are of age, and therefore she can object nothing against you, and tho the fear of disobliging your Father would make her endeavour to hinder our Marriage, the same Fear will oblige her to keep the Secret when it is done. I approve what you say, *said I*. But our Marriage, will it stand ? *said she*, and will she not dispute the Validity of it ? I have no Doubts my self ; 'tis enough that my Conscience is satisfy'd, so long as I am your Wife before God I care not what the World thinks of me ; but she will perhaps join with your Father to break the Match, and make us both wretched if it gets Air. You shall be my lawful Wife, *said I*, before God and Man, nor shall your Reputation smart one Moment for all the Pleasure the Possession of you gives me : The holy Man who will join our Hands fast as Heaven has our Hearts, will take care of all ; and nothing shall be omitted on my Part, to put it out of the Power of Men and Devils to separate us. The Mistress of the House being return'd from buying what I order'd, enter'd with several Porters who were loaded with the Furniture she had bought. We seem'd to take no notice



till they were gone ; then she began to praise my Mistress's Beauty, and compliment us both. We had a little Colation, after which my dear *Magdelaine*, promising to come at nine the next Morning, took leave and went away, I following at some distance, having first given Orders for a handsome Treat for the next Morning. When we met there again at the Hour appointed, she found her Chamber very complete, and in great order for so short a time, and the Furniture neat and well-chosen. After we had look'd on every thing, I desired our Landlady to fetch the Priest for whom we waited, and I was left alone with my Mistress, who again fell into her melancholy Humour, which I perceived by her Face. Have you any thing yet remaining my dear Angel, *said I*, to trouble you ? for God's sake share the Joy I feel. I am not insensible of that Joy, *said she*, but I dread what may arrive in the future ; the Thought frights me ; yet 'tis for you alone that I fear, and not for my self ; if you are but happy, let me be wretched, I care not ; and if the Possession of me can make you happy, I shall never repent the giving of my self to you, let what will, befall me.

I can never be happy, *said I*, if you are not so also, and I will rather this Moment renounce all my Hopes of possessing you, and be miserable alone, than purchase my Satisfaction at the Expence of your Peace and Felicity. I believe you, *said she*, and I am certain you will never give me one Moment's Disquiet : But yet I am persuaded that I am  
born

born to be unhappy. She let fall a Shower of Tears as I clasp'd her in my Arms, the fatal Presage of our future Misfortunes: I wiped them away, and did all I could to dissipate her Fears. The Priest arrived, and we were left alone with him for above an Hour; he saw the Lady, who was not only a complete Beauty, but had the Air and Mein of a Person well-born, and who appear'd both wise and noble: he treated us with the utmost Respect, and made us a short but excellent Exhortation on the Duties of the State we were going to enter into; he explain'd to us the meaning of those Words of the holy Scripture, that *a Man must leave Father and Mother, and Country and Friends, and cleave to his Wife*; and also, that *a Woman must follow her Husband*: These Words, said he, you are obliged to observe above others; for those whom their Parents dispose of, may reflect on them if they are unhappy, and say to them, *'Tis you that have chosen a Wife, or a Husband, for me, and made me wretched; had I chosen for my self, I might have lived happily*. But you have both made choice of one another, *you* can blame none but your selves; and as you are to be marry'd by your own Desire, you are obliged never to abandon one another: As for you, Sir, said he to me, you here are going to take a Lady who has not a Fortune equal to your own, and fear the losing your Father's Estate, which makes you keep it a Secret; but this will be no Excuse before God for your using her ill, or leaving her hereafter: She does not deceive you, your Marriage.

Marriage is valid tho secret, and you are bound to run all Risks with and for her, and to be true and faithful to her all the Days of your Lives. And for you Madam, *said he*, I doubt not but you know your Duty; you are under a double Obligation to this Gentleman for marrying you, as to his Fortune, and the hazard he runs in doing it. In fine, he made a very excellent Discourse to us both; after which he dined with us, and after Dinner writ, and made us sign two Papers full of most sacred Promises to one another, declaring our Marriage in Form; the one sign'd by me he deliver'd to her, and the other, sign'd by her, to me; then we, and all present, promised to keep the Secret. And now I desired to know when he would marry us? He answer'd, not till we had both come to him to Confession, and received the Sacrament at his Hands, and then he would do it when we pleased. So we fix'd our Days, I for the next Day; and she for the *Sunday* following; and the next Morning after, for our Marriage, when we promised to be at his Convent-Chapel at fix of the Clock in the Morning; and so he took leave.

And now being left alone with my Mistress, she told me she was much pleas'd and satisfy'd, both with the Priest and our Marriage; and she appear'd very contented with all I had done, and visited every Corner of her Chamber examining the Furniture, and found every thing to her liking. I told her I had promised fifty *Louis-d'ors* to the Mistress of the House, and that I would have her give it to her

her herself; so I gave her my Purse, and call'd the Woman, to whom she gave the Money, and bid her take away what was left at Dinner, saying, I am very well pleased with the Furniture you have bought for me, and I thank you; here is the Present Monsieur *des Prez* promised you: We shall dine here on *Monday*; here is Money to purchase a Dinner, pray let nothing be wanting, for it is our Wedding-Treat: I answer'd, and we will all be merry. She took the Money very respectfully, wish'd us all Happiness, and retired.

And now being again alone, I embraced her tenderly, and we consulted about her coming out on the *Monday* following, and staying all Night; for that I insisted upon. She answer'd, that was a Trifle, for she could go and pay a Visit to a Lady who was an intimate Friend of hers and her Mother's, and desire the Lady to send for her over-night, to come to go out with her early the next Morning some where out of *Paris*, for to take the Air; and I will tell my Friend, *said she*, that I have a mind to go to *Mount Valeriane*, and that I cannot get leave of my Mother but by this Means: She will oblige me in this I am certain; and when the truth is afterwards discover'd, (if it be ever) my Mother will only chide me, and that I am used to: Fear not, *said she*, I will not fail you. I again embraced her, and then conducted her to a Coach, in which I sent her home.

And returning, I sent for a Lock-Smith to fit our Chamber-door with a Lock and three Keys,  
one



one for my dear *Magdelaine*, one for the Landlady, and one for myself; and, it being early, I staid the Evening with the good Man my Landlord, and his Wife; and I promised to serve him in getting him some settled Employ, which I afterwards did, and shall all my Life take care of him. His Wife being extremely taken with my Mistress's Beauty, and full of Acknowledgments for our Present, fell into Exclamations on that Subject, and talk'd of nothing else.; nay she took such a Love to her from that Hour, that she thought she could never do enough for her Service: And this poor Woman is at present almost all the Consolation I have in the World, and we often weep together, lamenting my dear *Magdelaine's* untimely Death, and are I am certain equally concern'd. Here he shed Tears, and for some Moments was silent, and then pursued his Discourse thus: As I was going out of this House the *Sunday* following after Dinner, I met the good Priest who was to marry us the next Morning, and we walk'd together talking, and went insensibly into the *Capuchine's* Garden in *la Rue St. Honoré*, which was a Place far distant from my Father's; here we sat down upon a Seat, and another Priest joining us, we fell into a very serious Discourse on pious Subjects, as is proper, and the custom of such Persons: We talk'd of the *Prodigal Son in the Gospel*, and my Friend spoke so movingly on that Subject, that I was charm'd with his Discourse. Mean time my Father coming thither, and seeing me in such good Company, came behind, and hearken'd to  
our

## French LOVERS. 231

our Conversation ; at last turning my Head I perceived him, and was indeed much surpriz'd, fearing he had made some Discovery of my next Morning's Design: I am glad Son, *said he*, you pass your Time so well, and wish I may never find you in worse Company: We all bow'd, and so he left us. On which I took leave ; and returning home at Night, and sitting down to Supper with him, he began to quarrel with me, and to abuse all religious Orders. It seems he had taken a Whim in his Head, that I was going to be a Monk ; and having ask'd the Porter at the Convent, if I used to go often thither ? and he telling him, Yes, as indeed I did, to visit *Gallouin*, your Friend and mine, who was of this Order and Convent. This confirm'd his Suspicions, being join'd with some other Circumstances ; for I had a few Days before, turn'd away my Footman, whom I suspected to be a Spy upon me ; and now went out often alone, and on foot : So that he rail'd against the poor Convent ; and told me, if I turn'd religious I might beg or starve for him, he would not leave me a Groat. I smiled at his Mistake, and answer'd gently: That I had no such Design, and could not imagin what he mean'd. He always huff'd the *Mendicant's* who came to his Gate, and yet was charitable to Children and old People, who he said could not work ; but rail'd at the Monks and Fryars, bidding them work and earn their Bread, as their first Founder's had done ; call'd them lazy Louts, and Pests to the Church and Nation. One day, as I was standing with him at the

the Gate, where he was seeing some Plummers and Pavours working, to lay new Pipes for the Water to serve our House, a kind of Hermit, with a venerable Aspect, crav'd an Alms of him ; to whom he gave this Answer, Turn your Eyes on these Men, work as they do ; they gain their Bread with the Sweat of their Brows, and are no Burden to the Publick ; the foolish Devotion of blindly zealous Christians, which supports so many useles Mouths, have fill'd *France* with Vagabonds and Hypocrites : You understand me, said he, looking on the Hermit ; who, much confus'd, turn'd his Back, and went on crossing himself, without saying one word.

But to return to my Story, all the Domesticks who heard my Father's Discourse, concluded that I was turning *Capuchine*, and that was the Reason of my turning away my Footman. And this gave the Grounds for the Report that was afterwards spread of my turning religious. He that Night sent for my Footman, and commanded him not to leave me, but to follow me wherever I went, and inform him of all my Actions ; and if you do not obey me, *said he*, take care, for I will get you hang'd one Day or other ; but if you do as I bid you, it will be well for you. This I had notice of ; but I prevented my being follow'd the next Morning, for I went out before Day at the Garden-gate, and made so many Turnings and Windings before I reach'd the Church, that the most cunning Man on Earth could not have dogg'd me without my perceiving it.

I came there exactly at the Hour, and met my Mistress there, with the Priest, and the rest who were in our Secret : They waited for me in a little Chapel ; all being ready, and the Doors being shut, we were immediately marry'd : After which the Doors were open'd, and the Priest said Mass publicly ; then my Bride went out first and the rest follow'd, and I staid with the good Father, whom I rewarded handsomly, and desired his Company at Breakfast with us. He accordingly came, and my Bride gave him also a Present ; before Breakfast he produced our Marriage-Contracts, which he had kept till now, and had them dated and witnessed by four Witnesses, that is our Host, two Merchants that were his Neighbours, and a Country Magistrate, who were all his Friends, and in our Secret, on his Recommendation. In their Presence he made us both take an Oath to perform what we had there promised to each other ; so he gave me my Contract to my Wife, which was writ with my own Hand, and led me into a Chamber, where before two Publick-Notaries, he made me inclose the Contract in a Paper, and seal it up with my own Seal, and then acknowledge that what that inclosed Paper contain'd, was my own Act and Deed, and of my own free Will ; and that in case of my Death, or any other Accident, I deliver'd it to this Priest, to be used and given as I had directed him to do ; and the Notaries thought it was a Will which I had made. Then, being return'd to my Bride, and the Company, he deliver'd the  
Writing



Writing to her, saying, Here Madam is all that can be done for your Security, as to the World ; be easy, for your Marriage will stand good before God and Man : Never open this Paper till there is a Necessity for it, and then do it to such as will be able and learn'd in the Law, and fit to procure justice for you. From this Hour she behaved herself with that Vertue and Duty to me, that I had all the reason in the world to believe she was intirely satisfy'd with her Marriage, and I can never give her half the praises she did merit.

She came in an Undress to be marry'd, which I was pleas'd withal ; for tho it was after *Easter*, yet it was too cold a Morning to bear a light Dress ; but she had got dress'd at her Lodgings, whether she had sent a Habit that Morning, whilst I staid with the Priest a dating and sealing the Contracts ; so that we found her fine as a Dutchess, and charming as a *Venus*, which shew'd that she strove to please and credit me : She had a Mantua and upper Petticoat of blue and silver Brocade striped with Silver, and trimm'd with a Silver Lace and Fringe ; her under Petticoat was of white Sattin, with a Silver open Lace ; she had fine Shoes with Diamond Buckles, and Silk Stockings with Silver Clocks ; she had delicate Linen, and her Head was admirably dress'd in the finest Lace and Ribbons, and she had a fine Pearl Necklace on : In fine, she was the most charming Creature I ever beheld, and I loved her to madness, and every Body admired her as well as I, and praised my Choice. We dined to our Satisfaction,

plenti-

plentifully but with no Excess; and about three a-clock the good Father and Company took leave, and left her and I alone. But, alas! who can express the Pleasures of those happy Moments which Time has borne away, and left me to eternally regret. Here he wept and sigh'd afresh, and said a hundred moving Things concerning her Death. At length he continued his Narration in a more peaceful Tone, and said: We staid alone till seven a-clock, when we eat a Collation, and after supp'd with Chearfulness; but then she would go home, not daring to stay all Night; so we fix'd another Meeting for two Days after. And so having given her one of the Keys of the Chamber, where I placed Pen, Ink, and Paper for our Use, which ever came first, in case we did not meet, to appoint another Meeting, and inform one another of any thing necessary. I satisfy'd our Host and his Wife for their Trouble, to their great Content, and so conducted my Bride into a Coach and left her, and now thought my self the happiest Man on Earth.

I fear'd nothing more but my Footman, who by my Father's Order still watch'd me, and to prevent all Discovery I hired another Chamber in the next House, which belong'd to the same Landlord, and got him to open a Door into the other, so that my Wife and I had no need to go in the same way. And thus, leaving my Lacquey below Stairs when I enter'd the House to wait my coming down, I prevented his seeing who went in or out of the other. Thus I received my Wives Letters,  
and

and answer'd them, leaving our Letters for one another on the Table in our own Chamber, where we met frequently, she often stealing out to me ; nay we pass'd whole Afternoons together, and often went abroad in a Hackney-Coach, or on the Water, to divert our selves in some Village or pleasant Retreat, she going always mask'd, and I had provided good store of change of Habits to disguise her in. And thus we spent a whole Year in inconceivable Pleasures, and I was the happiest Man on Earth ; my Wife appear'd every Day more charming, and my Love increased hourly ; our Souls and Inclinations were united, and our Affection for each other was equal and inexpressible, yet in publick we so well conceal'd our Thoughts, that even her own Mother was deceived, and complain'd to her Friends, that I was grown to quite disregard her Daughter and her ; nay, she spoke to a Gentleman who was a constant Visiter there, and my Acquaintance, to ask me if they had done any thing to disoblige me. This was done with a View of self-interest, for she had again occasion for me, to use mine with the same Gentleman to whom I had gone with her once before. All this my Wife told me, and we consulted together what Answer I should give ; and we agreed that it should be, That I was as much devoted to her Service as ever, and ready to do every thing, and to go any where to do her good ; but that I refrain'd going to her House in obedience to my Father's Commands, more out of respect to her, than out of fear for my own Welfare, for I would  
not

not have fail'd one Day of visiting them, if I had been absolute master of my self; and that I would meet her the next Day at the *Justice-ball* or *Palace*. I accordingly found her there, and went along with her wherever she had Occasion to go. I also offer'd her my Purse, and never spoke one Word to her Daughter before her, only to ask after our little Society. I had also the Precaution to ask my Father before I went out, whether or no he would be displeased, if I did some little Services to this Lady which lay in my power to do; and he answer'd, that he should rather be glad, and desired it as a Favour of me; and that he had never oppos'd my going there, but only for fear that something might ensue that would be of ill Consequence to her Family and his own.

It was almost incredible that two Persons who lived like my Wife and I, had any concern together, and that we could see one another so often in publick without any change of Countenance, when but a quarter of an Hour before perhaps we had been lock'd in close Embraces. She proved with Child about the latter end of *September*, and told me of it so soon as she perceived it. At which I rejoiced, as it is natural for a Man to do who loves his Wife. There was nothing more easy than for us to hide it for a time, and we continued our Meetings without fear; but as all human Prudence cannot prevent Misfortunes, or foresee a thousand unexpected Accidents which befall us, I strove to provide against the worst, and oblig'd her to take a  
good



good Sum of Money which I had often press'd her to take before. The Winter past well enough, but by the Spring she grew so big that it began to be visible, and we were obliged to think of discovering all to her Mother. She thought at first this would be an easy matter to do, but now she began to find a thousand Difficulties which she did not before foresee, or at least had before fancy'd easy to be surmounted : She now fear'd that her Mother would be displeased at our clandestine Marriage, and above all that she had married me at all, for fear of my Father. I did all I could to quiet her Fears, and told her I would never repent what I had done, and I hoped she did not. No, *said she*, I would do all that I have done, were it to do again. I then propos'd to her (and I wish to God she had follow'd my Counsel) not to return home any more, but to remain in our Lodging, and not go abroad till she had lain in, and only send a Letter to her Mother, to let her know that she was retired for some time into a Convent : 'Twas no matter whether she gave credit or not to that, whatever her Suspicions were, the Consideration of her own Honour would make her silent ; mean time I shall have the pleasure, *said I*, of seeing you every Day ; and if at any time it becomes necessary for you to discover all, do it ; but do not run the Risk at present. All you say, *said she*, I approve ; but I think it is necessary my Mother should be intrusted, 'tis a Duty I owe her as my Parent. I am of a contrary Opinion, *said I* ; but tell me, how do you propose to break the

the  
ha  
and  
ver  
mu  
will  
gai  
at  
nex  
and

A  
Com  
you  
wit  
will  
is t  
wor  
sons  
the

S  
whic  
to th  
direc  
not,  
com  
cam

the Matter to her? Why, *said she*, I would have her sent for when we are here together, and as she is very passionate, here she may vent her Fury with no danger to us, and we must bear with her; and that being over, she will hearken to Reason. I was still much against it, but not being willing to cross her, I at last yielded to it, and we agreed on the next Morning to do it. We accordingly met, and she had writ this Letter ready to send.

The LETTER.

*AN* Affair of moment having just befallen me, dear Mother, makes me beg your Company immediately; and I implore the Favour of you to come in the Coach I send herewith for you, and to come alone where that will bring you, and then you shall know what is the matter, which I cannot tell you but by word of Mouth, and in presence of the Persons with whom I now am. This comes from the Hands of

Your most Obedient

Daughter and Servant,

*Mary Magdelaine de l'Epine.*

She sent this Letter by the same Coach which had brought her thither, with Orders to the Coachman to bring Madam de l'Epine directly to our Lodging, if she came alone; if not, to stop at a Church-door, where I would come to her on his sending word; but she came alone.

Whilst

Whilst the Coach went to Madam de l'Epine's, we resolv'd on the manner we would receive her ; and it was agreed that I should do it alone, and not expose my Wife to a Lady whose passionate Temper we were too well acquainted withal ; for she was a very Fury. I had copy'd the Contract between my Wife and me, to show her, fearing she would in her Rage destroy the Original, if I put it into her Hands ; and as we were talking I heard the Coach stop at the Street-door ; so I put my Wife into a Closet where she could hear all that pass, and let down the Hanging over the Door, placing two Stools against it so that none could perceive that there was a Door in that Place, and then went to receive her Mother, who was surpriz'd to see me there. As I gave her my Hand to come out of the Coach, I said, Pray Madam go up Stairs, it was I that sent for you, and your Daughter only oblig'd me with a Letter. Where is she, Sir ? *said she.* She is gone to Prayers, *said I,* and will be here presently. She went up into the Chamber, whilst I discharg'd and sent away the Coach, to prevent her returning immediately. Then I went up and shut the Chamber-door, double locking it and putting the Key in my Pocket, which she did not perceive. Then she began to ask me some Questions about the Chamber, who it belong'd to ? and how fine the Furniture was. To all which I answer'd briefly, desiring her to sit down. Can you imagine, Madam, *said I,* what could oblige Mademoiselle your Daughter to first send for you, and then not wait

wait your coming? No indeed, Sir, *said she*, do you know the Reason of it? Yes, Madam, *said I*, and I will acquaint you with it: She has chosen me to make her Peace with you, for a thing which we have done without asking your Consent and Permission: Consider that it is in vain to be angry for a thing that is already past, and cannot be recall'd: To be plain, we are married, and she is now, I bless God, five Months gone with Child; and it is more than three Quarters of a Year that she has been my Wife: I beg that you would reflect that she has made no ill Choice; and that I have ask'd no Fortune with her; none but my Father is to be fear'd: I am of age, and master of more already than will suffice to make us both happy. She interrupted me often whilst I spoke, and at last fell into the most violent Passion imaginable, crying and wringing her Hands: Oh! *said she*, I am utterly undone, my Law-suit is lost, I am ruin'd; I will ever hate and detest her; let her never appear in my sight, a disobedient Wretch, a Monster, a Viper, to ruin her whole Family! I let her alone till I thought her Rage was pretty well vented, and then I began to speak in a more lofty Tone to her: How, Madam, *said I*, is this the manner in which you receive so good News? I think I am a very good Match for your Daughter; my Purse can supply your Occasions at all times; and were my Father the most unjust Judge on Earth, as all the World well knows he is not, but a Man of the greatest Integrity,

M



grity, yet I can find Friends enough to do you Right ; and tho he may be angry with me for marrying your Daughter, yet he will abhor you if you prove an Enemy to your own Child : 'tis doubly your Interest to keep the Secret, and then you will neither disoblige him nor me ; if you divulge it, you will lose both our Friendships : nay, if you make me very uneasy, you may perhaps oblige me to join with him in our common Revenge, and break the Marriage ; for tho I have honourably taken all Precautions to make it secure, and such as may prevent her being injured if I die before my Father, yet it still lies in my Power to break it : consider well what you do. No, *said she*, I will consider no longer, but I will go this very Hour to Monsieur des Prez, and acquaint him with it. Go, *said I*, opening the Door, I fear nothing ; I shall only be sent a few Days to St. Lazarus \*, then he will relent, and I shall regain his Favour by abandoning your Daughter, whilst you will be look'd on with abhorrence by all good People, for having been your Daughter's ruin ; and my Father, who is a Man of great Probity and Justice, will regard you as a base Woman, who have sacrificed your own Child to your sordid Thirst of interest and gain ; and you will be

---

\* A House in Paris to which Persons of Condition sometimes send their Sons when they have highly offended them, where they are confin'd, and made to do some slight Services, or suffer Chastisements according to their Age and Crimes.

no longer thought worthy the Name of a Mother, but be esteem'd rather an infernal Fury, who can give up your Child and Honour for a little Money, and every honest Person will become your Enemy. But, on the contrary, I told her, That if she would be prudent all would go well: That her Daughter should lye-in in that House and Chamber, having ask'd her, in publick, to give her leave to retire to a Convent for a few Months, under which Pretence her Absence would not be censur'd or taken notice of: That as for her Law-suit, I would do her all the Service imaginable, her Interest being now mine; and that she might expect to find in me a tender Son-in-law, and a faithful Friend; but if she persisted in her violent Resolutions, I would remove her Daughter where neither my Father nor she, should ever see her more: And tho, *said I*, he may force me to break the Marriage, no Person can hinder me from giving her what shall maintain her and my Child, independent of you both, and in an Hours time she shall leave *Paris*: And remember you are going to do a thing which you will repent all the Days of your Life. With these and the like Discourses I at length appeased her, and she began to ask in a more gentle Tone, where her Daughter was. She is not far off, *said I*, she waits your Call, but give her no ill Treatment; but remember, that tho she is your Child, she is my Wife; and I shall not only defend her, but resent any Injury that is done her. My speaking in so high a Strain

quite humbled her. But if your Father comes to know that we are reconciled, *said she*, what shall I do? for 'tis the fear of him only that makes me displeased. I made her sensible how easy it was to conceal all, since we had so long kept the Secret. She at last seem'd contented, and again ask'd to see her Daughter; and desired to see the Priest who had marry'd us, to be assured that our Marriage was good; and I accordingly sent for him: he came, and seem'd a little surpriz'd at entering the Room; but when I declar'd my Reasons for sending for him, he readily inform'd her of all that had past, and shew'd her the care he had taken to secure our Marriage from being annull'd, in case of any Dispute. At last she seem'd very well satisfy'd, and again ask'd to see her Daughter; and now, believing there was nothing to fear, I put by the Stools, open'd the Door of the Closet, and brought my Wife forth to her. She threw herself at her Mother's Feet, who lifted her up tenderly, they both wept, and we all embraced one another, and I was extremely glad that we had at last vanquish'd the old Lady: so I kept the good Clergyman, and we all dined together very merrily; and it was agreed, that my Wife should the next Day, in publick, ask leave to retire to a Convent, and so come to her Lodgings to remain till she was up again.

Madam *de l'Epine* took leave, and went away first, the Priest next, and then my Wife and I were left alone. I embraced her a hundred times, applauded her Conduct, transported that

that I could now promise my self the Happiness of passing some whole Nights with her, a Pleasure I had ne'er enjoy'd before. I desired her to provide every thing necessary for her lying-in, for which I gave her Money, and she employ'd our Landlady, who in truth loved her tenderly, and took such care that in a few Hours nothing was wanting. I at last took leave, and promised to dine with my Wife and her Mother the next Day. I came accordingly, and found them together ; I past the whole day with them, and, for the first time, slept all night with my Wife in my Arms. Thus we past four happy Months, in which time I did not lie there constantly, but only sometimes, for fear of giving Umbrage to my Father at home ; and we might have been happy and undiscover'd to this Hour, had it not been for a fatal Accident, which has deprived her of her Life, and me of my Peace and Repose for all my Life to come, besides the Ill-reputation that it has caused me to have in the deceived World. Here he beg'd my Patience to sit down a-while and take Breath, being faint, before he proceeded to relate the remaining Part of his tragic Relation. Then he let fall a Shower of Tears, and look'd like one half dead ; I chear'd him all I could, and at last he continued his Discourse thus.

I had been two whole Days without visiting my Wife, who was every Day in Expectation of her Travail, and much out of order, and finding herself grow worse, sent me a Letter by her Landlord, who frequented my Father's



as usual, and so soon as I had read it I prepared to go to her, having put it into my Pocket, and as I cross'd the Court-yard to go out, I met with my Father, who bid me go along with him into his Closet, because he had something to say to me of moment ; I accordingly follow'd him, and he talk'd to me about an Employ that he design'd to purchase for me, and mention'd something of a Match that he had to propose to me. These words, you may imagine threw me into a great Disorder, and I was at a loss what to answer, and to hide my Concern drew forth my Handkerchief to blow my Nose, and unfortunately pull'd out the fatal Letter, without perceiving it, and so took leave of my Father, and went directly to my Wife, alas ! for the last time, for my Eys never saw that dear Object any more. I found her Mother with her, who beg'd that she might be permitted to carry her Daughter home, to lie-in with her, where her other Daughters and she could take better care of her than there ; and that it could be kept as much a Secret as here, for she could make use of her own Midwife, of whose Fidelity she was assured ; and that she would not acquaint even her, or her own Daughters, who their Sister was married to. My Wife intreated me to consent ; and tho my boding Soul presaged some Evil would ensue, and I did all I could to oppose it, my Fondness for her overcame my Reason, and I at last yielded : I thought I could not refuse her any thing in such a Condition, and at such a time, tho I still pleaded how hard a Task it would be  
for

for me, to be oblig'd to be absent from her when her dear Life perhaps would be in danger? and how impossible it would be for me to live without a sight of her, and the dear Infant whom I hop'd she would bring safe into the World; but her Mother over-power'd my just Reasons, and I, govern'd by some fatal Planet, or my evil Genius, yielded, and by that means was the miserable Cause of her Death and my own Ruin.

The next Morning was fixt for her Removal in a Chair to her Mother's: I stay'd very late this Night with her, and a hundred times would have recall'd my Word, and try'd to prevail with her not to remove; but all in vain, Fate had decreed it otherwise no doubt, and human Reason was unable to oppose. We at last took a tender Leave of one another, passionate and sincere; both wept, and both were loth to part, yet we ne'er had one Thought that it was to be our last, eternal Farewel in this World. I went home in a Chair to my Father's, where, tho things were strangely chang'd in respect to me, yet I perceiv'd no Alteration, nor could any Person give me notice, because no body knew any thing of it: And thus I deliver'd my self up to my Ruin. The moment that I left my Father's Closet, he did design to go forth also; and passing by his Desk he saw the fatal Letter, and imagining it to be some Paper which he had let fall, and that it might be of moment, he took it up, and found it half open, and seeing it was a Woman's Hand, and directed to me, he read it and found these Words.

## The LETTER.

My Dear Husband,

**H**AVE you abandon'd me in the Condition I am now in, full of Pain, and every moment expecting to bring into the World the precious Pledge of your Love and our sacred Union? you have past two whole Days without seeing me, which is enough, were I in health, to render me uneasy and break my Repose; and now when I have most need of your presence to fortify, and render me less fearful of the Pains I must expect to suffer, you seem to have forgotten me: for God's sake come this Day, if you desire to preserve the Life of your most

Affectionate Wife

*Mary Magdelaine de l'Epine.*

I leave you to imagine how much he was enrag'd at the reading of this Letter; he was one of the most passionate Men on Earth, but one of those who could best conceal it; he said not a Word, but resolv'd to part us for ever, by securing me, and ruining the Mother and Daughter. Thus determin'd, he went to the Hall as usual, and there gave Orders to an Exempt and his Archers, to be ready at the Counting-house of the Inn where the *Flanders* Coach set out from, in the Street *St. Martins*, at six a-Clock the next Morning.

Having

Having taken out a Warrant, and all necessary Forms to authorize them to do what he design'd, not trusting the Officer with the secret of my Name, nor with the cognizance of his own Domesticks, he dined abroad, and coming home at night, gave Orders that I should be sent to him so soon as I came in, which was not till eleven a-clock. When I came to him he said not one Word that could give me any Suspicion, but only ask'd me if I was engag'd for the next Morning on any Business, otherwise he desir'd my Company to a place where he had a long time had a mind to carry me. I suppos'd it was to the Father of a young Lady, whom he had mention'd to me some time before ; and I answer'd, that I was ready to wait on him any where till after Noon, when I was to be at the Hall about a Tryal. He answer'd that was very well ; then we will go out together at six to-morrow Morning where I design, and we shall not make any long Stay, but be back time enough for Dinner.

We accordingly rose, and took Coach at that fatal Hour, it being one of the longest Days in the Year, the 19th of *June*, a Day which I must ever remember with Tears and eternal Regret. We stop'd at the Place appointed in *St. Martins-Street*, where we went up into a Chamber, which I was no sooner enter'd, but the Exempt came in with four huge ill-look'd Ruffians, who immediately seiz'd me, and took away my Sword : I resisted all I could in vain : My Father looking on me with a furious Countenance, said, Son,

M 5

you



you are not to stay here long, you shall be sent to a safer place ; see there the Cause of my treating you thus, and ask your self what you deserve. He threw the Letter to me, and then turn'd his Back upon me, and left me in the Hands of these inexorable Wretches, to whom I offer'd my Purse, Watch, Rings, and a Note for half that I was worth to let me go, but all in vain, they too much fear'd my Father, and he paid them too well for me to be heard. Then I proceeded to Threats, and said they could not answer what they did, because I was of Age. They said, they car'd not, let my Father look to that, they would obey his Orders. And now they strip'd me of my Clothes and Wig, which one of them put on, and dress'd me in another Sute of my own, much richer, which had been sent thither for that purpose. I ask'd the Exempt his Reasons for so doing : He said it was my Father's Pleasure, who had order'd that I should immediately be convey'd without any Noise in a Coach to a place where he was gone to before me ; and that his Follower was to ride out of Town in my Clothes, follow'd by my Footman, and on my Horses, to make the World believe I was gone into the Country. This distracted me more ; and I too well guess that I was going to be imprison'd at *St. Lazarus*, and curs'd the cruel Laws of my Country that give rigid Parents this Privilege over their Sons. I since learn'd that this Fellow dress'd in my Habit, rid full speed along the Streets out of the Town, and that my rascally Footman, who follow'd him, and was my  
Father's

Father's Creature, stop'd at a Tavern, and drank there, telling several People who were there that I was going to the Country, and would not return for a good while. This gave Occasion to that false Report that has done me so much Injury, that I had abandon'd my Wife, who was, alas, much worse treated than I was ; for I was only carry'd to *St. Lazarus*, in which fatal Moments she surrender'd her spotless Soul, and suffer'd the Agonies of Death, together with her harmless Infant. Here a Flood of Tears interrupted his Discourse ; he folded his Arms, and threw his Head into my Bosom, and so fainted : At last recovering I begg'd him to desist, and proceed no farther in this melancholy History ; but he refus'd, saying, Alas ! it rather is some ease to vent my Grievs, for I must for ever think upon that dreadful Hour. So he went on.

So soon as my Father had left *St. Lazarus's*, he went directly on foot to *Madam de l'Epine's*, who was much surpriz'd at his Visit, but more when she knew the occasion of it : He express'd his Resentments in the most outrageous Terms, and treated her like the most vile and detestable of Women. It was in vain that she protested that she knew nothing of our Marriage, and declar'd, that if she could light upon her Daughter, she would do him justice. He regarded not all her Excuses, but vow'd he would be her Ruin and her Children's ; and that he would treat her as the Suborner and Betrayer of his Son ; and if he could ever catch her Daughter, that he would shut her

her up in a Convent, and break our Marriage.

In the Heat of this furious Dispute my dear Wife enter'd the House in a Chair; there being a long Entry, she was set down at the Stairs foot, and then sent away the Chair; and hearing nothing of the Noise above, she went directly up, as all the Servants had done before, at the Noise that they heard, to see what was the matter, so that no body was below to give her notice that my Father was there. So soon as she appear'd all my Father's Rage was turn'd on her; and he treated her in such barbarous Terms, to which she was till now a Stranger, that all her Courage forsook her: Grief seiz'd her Spirits, and she unfortunately fell down in a Swoon at the Stairs head, and roll'd down all the Stairs, which were above twenty in number, and very steep. Her Mother, who ought on this occasion to have forgot all other Considerations but the Preservation of her Child's Life, and run to succour her, us'd her worse than the most savage Beast doth its Young, and would not so much as look upon her with Pity, declaring she renounc'd her, and would no more own her for her Child: See, Sir, said she, if I have had any hand in the Marriage, judge your self if I did countenance the matter. So she presently order'd a Chair to be call'd, and made her be taken up void of Sense, and bath'd in her own Blood, and sent her away to the *Hotel de Dieu*, as if she had been a Prostitute: Oh! just God, what Cruelty, what Barbarity was here! Could one possibly have  
more

more cruelly sacrific'd one's own Child to the vile fear of losing a Fortune.

Notwithstanding my Father's Rage at that instant, this Sight disarm'd his Anger, and the Mother's Cruelty melted him into Pity; and he was so much astonish'd at her Barbarity, that he was struck dumb; he compassionated a Lady whose Beauty he had always admir'd; and tho he would have undone the Marriage, he would not have injur'd her Person or Life, nor her Child's, which he could not but regard as his own Flesh and Blood. He immediately left the House, more confused, at what he had there seen, than her unnatural Mother, and presently sent her back word, that he would not hinder her from doing what was fit for her Daughter in such a Condition; and that he even made it his Request to her to take care of her and the Child she was big withal. And she, on her side, as I have been since inform'd, acted in this cruel manner only out of a damnable Policy to gain my Father's favour, and was now in despair to think she had gone so far; and had not sent her to the *Hotel de Dieu* with any other design but to blind him, and to go and fetch her thence, and carry her back to our Lodging to be taken care of. Accordingly she went to the *Hotel* directly, where she found her Daughter; but alas! in what a Condition! not such as could admit of her Removal thence, for she was dying; Oh! what a moving Spectacle was this, to see a virtuous Creature, beautiful as the Angels, to whom her Soul was going to keep Company, stretch'd on a poor, tho clean Bed, and in the sharpest



sharpest Agonies ! All that they could do was to remove her to a more private Room ; she had come to her self in the Chair, but soon fainted again, without being able to speak one Word. She was laid thus senseless on the Bed, and returning to Life, saw her self in this sad place, surrounded with such Creatures as she would have rather died than have been seen withal at another time, which doubtless hasten'd her End with the surprize. Being remov'd, and hearing her Mother's Voice, she open'd her Eyes with a deep Groan ; then she endeavour'd to comfort her Daughter, but it was now too late, and she remain'd for an Hour without any other Signs of Life, but sometimes casting her Eyes about with dying Regards : At last she spake, and ask'd for me ; they told her I was not there ; then she ask'd for Pen, Ink and Paper, which they at first would have dissuaded her from using ; but she so intreated that it was brought her, and she writ till the Convulsions seiz'd her so strongly, that she could not hold the Pen ; and here are the dear Lines which I always wear next my Heart, and which you found me looking on ; read it, for my Tears make it impossible for me to do it : So I took the Paper from him, and with much difficulty read these Words, the remaining part being not legible.

*I Am dying : I did not expect so many Misfortunes at one time to besal me ; I shall not inquire into the Authors of my Death, because I will forgive all the World. Farewel, my dear Husband. Nothing of mine will remain with you, but the Remembrance of me ; for I feel that your Child is dead within me, as I shall shortly be. If I could but once more embrace you ere I leave the World I*

\* \* \* \* \*  
\* \* \* \* \*

He took the Letter from my Hand, and put it up again in his Bosom, and wiping his Tears away, proceeded with much Difficulty in his tragick Story. The Convulsions seiz'd her, and she could not finish : Her Senses returning, she beg'd a Priest might be call'd, to receive Absolution, which he gave her with the Blessed Sacrament. She was deliver'd of a dead Child, and in a Quarter of an Hour after expired herself with loss of Blood, not uttering one word against any Person living. This, my dear Wife, *said he*, was the fatal Consequence and End of our unfortunate Affection. Here he again wept, and I could not but sympathize with him in his Sorrows ; and we both shed Tears, for I was sensibly touch'd. He utter'd a hundred moving things on this sad Subject ; but I see, Ladies and Gentlemen, *said Monsieur du Puis*, that you are all touch'd with this Story, as I was, *perceiving that the Tears stood in all their Eyes.* No matter, *said Madam de Contamine*, go  
you

you on ; and when you have finish'd your Relation, we'll all tell you our Sentiments of it.

So he proceeded : As for my Part, *said des Prez, being a little recover'd*, I was, as I told you, shut up in *St. Lazarus's*, and heard not of my Wife's Death for eight Days, in which I labour'd under the greatest Anxiety and Impatience imaginable, being continually visited by some of the good Missionaries, who kept me company, and endeavour'd to comfort me, giving me to understand, that I must prepare to arm against some greater Evils than what I was already acquainted withal. At last they inform'd me of my dear Wife's death : And now it was, that I regreted my loss of Liberty more than ever, because it deprived me of the Means of taking my Revenge ; and here I did and said a thousand extravagant things, and for three Months time they strove in vain to bring me to my Reason, for I was indeed delirious, and not without Cause. These pious Men had pity on me, and wept and mourn'd along with me to bring me to my self ; and tho they could not overcome my Grief, yet they at last calm'd the Transports of my Rage, and brought me to better Thoughts ; and I talk'd no more of killing and destroying the Authors of my Misery : And I had not been let go from amongst them, if they had not seen that there was nothing more to fear from my Passion. But far from entering into *Paris*, I went strait to *Normandy* to my Brother-in-law, Monsieur *de Querville's* Seat, from whence I have been return'd but eight Days. So soon

as ever I arrived here, I went to the *Hotel de Dieu*, where I mourn'd my Wife a-new, and desired to see the Place where the Body lay; they shew'd it to me, and I swooned on the Coffin, in the Vault, which contain'd her and her dear Infant, so I am persuaded not to return thither any more. I having heard that her Mother had a Letter for me, I went thither directly; she gave it me, and I treated her as she deserved, notwithstanding the Excuses she made, and her pretended Sorrow for her Daughter's Death; and I have so pursued the Villain exempt, who refused to carry so much as a Line for me to my dear Wife, that he can scarce escape my Hands, nor shall the Rascal of a Footman go unpunished, and then I will resolve how I shall dispose of the remainder of my own unhappy Days. This at present is my Conditon: And now judge if I do not rather deserve Pity than Blame, and whether I am not very innocent, or if I merit the severe Censures the World has past upon me; and whether I did ever abandon my dear *Magdelaine*, and was any ways the Occasion of the Death of her, whose Life I would willingly purchase with the loss of all my own, had I a Million of Lives.

Thus Ladies, said *Monsieur du Puis*, and in this manner, did *Monsieur des Prez* relate his dismal Story to me; and I believe his Sorrow real and sincere. He has not publish'd his Marriage to the World for many Reasons, the chief of which is, because it would injure his Father's Honour and his own, considering where she died, and since the Child and she are both gone,



gone, 'tis needless ; and it would have been of no service to any but her Mother, whom he with good reason hates. And he swore to me, that he would be just and faithful to her Memory, and he has kept his word ; for all the while his Father lived he could never persuade him to marry. And now he is at liberty to do what he pleases, and possess'd of one of the best Employments in the Law, his manner of Life shews that he thinks no more of the Fair Sex, and that he still resents the Injuries he received ; for he has driven the Exempt out of *France* ; and both his Father and himself had such an Aversion for *Madam de l'Epine*, that she could ne'er get her Law-suit finish'd to this Day, nor ever will whilst she lives ; so that none but her Children will enjoy the Fortune, who are innocent of her Crimes, and truly regretted their Sister's death. He has also been as just in rewarding as in punishing ; for he has procured a very good Benefice for the Priest who marry'd them, and a good Place for the Man where he had Lodgings for his Lady, and, for the Wife, he now keeps her to govern his House, where she is Mistress of all. And thus he has made appear how much he values all those who any ways served his dead Wife, and how much he abhors those who were instrumental to her ruin and death.

If all this be true, *said Madam de Londé*, 'tis most certain he merits Compassion, and I lament them both. And so do I, *said Madam de Mongey*. And I also, *said Madam de Contamine*, yet I have observ'd that almost  
all

all these clandestine Marriages, made against Parents Wills, are never fortunate, of which Monsieur *des Prez* is here a convincing Proof, as Monsieur *du Puis* witnesses. He speaks truth, *said a Voice from behind*. On which every body turn'd their Heads to look, and saw Monsieur *de Contamine*, whose Wife ran to embrace him. This is very fine, to surprize People thus, *said the agreeable Madam du Puis*. And 'tis as fine, *said Contamine bowing to the Company*, to keep marry'd Ladies from Morning to Night, and oblige their Husbands to come to look for them at Midnight. Come, Madam, *said he to his Lady*, I begin to be weary of this way of living: Pray, Mademoiselle, don't debauch my Wife so, but marry, and keep better Hours. Don't be angry, *said his Lady*, my Dear, she will oblige you soon; all Parties are agreed: Ask Monsieur *des Renais* here, if it be not so. I vow, *said Contamine*, I did not see him before: Well, my Friend, are you at last cured of your Frenzy? what say you? I say, *said he*, that if I am to determine the Matter, 'tis as good as done. Madam *de Londé*, her Lover, and all the rest of the Company, felicitated Madam *du Puis* on the Reconciliation of her and her Lover: The Conversation was very diverting and witty; but it being very late, they were obliged to part, having fix'd an Hour for their Meeting again the next Day; and it was agreed that they should all dine together at Madam *de Contamine's*, who invited all the Company, where *des Frans* pro-

promised to bring Monsieur and Madam *de Jussy*. Monsieur *de Contamine* and his Lady went home together, Monsieur *du Puis* conducted Madam *de Londé* to her House, and Madam *de Mongey* staid and lay with her Friend Madam *du Puis*; and Monsieur *des Frans* return'd home with Monsieur *des Ronais*.

So soon as *des Ronais* and Monsieur *des Frans* were alone, *des Ronais* ask'd his Friend what he and Madam *de Contamine*, and Madam *du Puis*, had talk'd about before Supper? Nothing about you, *said des Frans*, I assure you. No, *said des Ronais*; but I guess it was about your self and Madam *de Mongey*; and I know she has always continued to have an Affection for you; she is a most virtuous deserving Lady; and Madam *de Contamine* and I are of Opinion, that you would be very happy together, and that you cannot do better; and I know from some of her best Friends, that she is desirous it should be proposed to you, tho it was long before she could prevail with herself to trust this Secret with any body; and that she has refused several very advantageous Offers, for this Reason: Being prest by old Monsieur *du Puis*, sometime before his Death, to accept of one which he thought well of, and he loved her like his own Child, she confess'd the Truth to him; and has shewn by her Conduct since, that she has laid all Thoughts of marrying any body else but you: This I have from

from very good Hands. But, alas ! *said des Frans*, I never loved her passionately tho I courted her ; I always had a great Respect and Esteem for the Lady, and my continual Visits and Assiduity to her, were only to disguise the violent Passion I had for another which has made me miserable, and was the Cause of all my Misfortunes, of which you shall know more to-morrow. Then there is no doubt, *said des Ronais*, but *Silvia* was the Mistress of your Heart ; but now she is dead, that Obstacle is removed ; and it is now time that you think of being grateful to this Lady, for that constant Affection which she has shewn for you. She is very beautiful, well-made, and virtuous ; not above six and twenty, very rich, and now her Parents only Heir, all her Brothers and Sisters being dead, besides an Uncle and an Aunt whose Fortune was left her ; and, what's more than Wealth, she loves you. Believe me, a Man had better marry a Woman who is fond of him tho he loves not her, for she will charm him into Affection by her Complaisance and Tenderness, than a Wife he passionately loves and who cares not for him, for then neither his Honour nor his Peace can be secure. Come, come let us go to bed, *said des Frans* ; when you have heard my sad Story to-morrow, then we shall see whether you will counsel me to marry again ; till then I shall say no more to you. So they bid one another good-night, and retired to their Chambers.

They



They were the next Morning waked by Monsieur *du Puis*, by nine of the Clock : They dress'd, and took Coach and went to Monsieur *de Jussy's*, whom they found in Bed. *Des Frans* told him they came to invite themselves to breakfast with him. He said, with all his Heart ; so he rose immediately, and went into a Dressing-room with them, to be dress'd. After some mutual Civilities on both sides, *des Frans* ask'd after his Lady. She is still asleep *said he*. Do you already lie asunder ? *said des Frans*. No, no, *said he*, we are not disgusted with one another's Company as yet ; come, and you shall see one of the most lovely Sleepers you ever view'd. At these words they went back to the Bed-chamber, and found the Lady at her Toilet, dressing. I thought you were still asleep, my Dear, *said de Jussy*. No, *said she*, I heard an Invitation to breakfast, and am desirous to have a Share in the good Company, and to manage the Treat. You do well, *said he*, come, haste and get ready. The Gentlemen praised her Beauty and good Nature, and she answer'd with much Wit and Politeness. *Des Frans* told Monsieur *de Jussy*, that he was engaged to bring him to meet Madam *de Mongey*, to reconcile him and her ; and that it was to be done at Madam *de Contamine's*. We will go thither freely, *said de Jussy*, that Lady is one of my old Acquaintance. 'Tis not the old Lady, *said des Frans*, 'tis her Daughter-in-law. How, *said de Jussy*, is her Son

Son then marry'd ? Yes, *answer'd des Frans*, and his Wife is as great a Heroine in Virtue, as yours in Constancy. The Lady blush'd, and seem'd desirous to know this Story, and *des Ronais* entertain'd her and her Husband with it, after the Breakfast was over. I have a great mind, *said Madam de Jussy*, when the Story was ended, to see this Lady whose History is so extraordinary. And I assure you, Madam, *said du Puis*, both she and the rest of the Company where we are all this Day to dine, have as great a Desire to see you, having heard your History from Monsieur *des Frans* : the Company will be numerous and the Rendezvous is to be at Monsieur *de Contamine's* ; and there Monsieur *des Frans* is to relate his melancholy Adventures. These, *said Monsieur de Jussy*, are great Reasons to make me desirous to go thither ; but there need- ed nothing else but what you told me about Madam *de Mongey*, to induce me to make one of the Company, because it is to reconcile Monsieur *des Frans* and her ; let us go therefore as soon as you please. It is past twelve, *said des Frans*, and they expect us. Let us haste then, *said de Jussy*. So he and *des Frans* went away in a hired Coach, and left Monsieur *du Puis* who went in his own to call Madam *de Londé*, leaving *des Ronais* to wait of Madam *de Jussy*, who staid last to be dress'd.

The Ladies arrived all about the same time, and were very obligingly received by Madam

*de Contamine*, particularly *Madam de Jussy*; and from this Hour they commenced a great Friendship; both she and her Husband made great Excuses to *Madam de Mongey*, who received them with much good Nature; and *Madam de Londé* coming in with her Lover, cha-m'd all the Company with her Person and Air.

The Company seem'd all such as were selected to please and ingage, and all *France* could not have furnish'd five more lovely and accomplished Maids and Wives, than the five who were here; and they entertain'd one another with mutual Compliments, as civility and good-breeding required, till the Conversation grew easy and familiar. Mean time *des Frans* talk'd aside with *Madam de Mongey*, and tho their Discourse was not heard, they perceived the lovely Widow blush. They all sat down to Table, and *Madam de Contamine* set *des Frans* betwixt her and *Madam de Mongey*, and the rest placed themselves every Lover next his Mistress.

During Dinner the Conversation was very pleasant; at last *Monfieur de Contamine* fell a praising Matrimony. And *du Puis* said, Here is a Gentleman in this Company will not relish what you say, he is an Enemy to that State, tho I cannot yet tell all the Particulars of his Reasons for it; but what I know of the Affair, I have told *Monfieur des Frans* in presence of *Monfieur des Ronais*, and mention'd a Necklace, which some have suspected to have been taken—

*Des*

*Des Frans* seem'd much surpriz'd at these Words, and interrupted him, saying, He that told you of that must be more than Man ; for it was I that took that Necklace : but how came you to get the Knowledge of that ? or where learn'd you the rest ? And you, *said Madam de Contamine*, pray when shall we hear your Adventures ? I shall not refuse it now, *said he*, since none can suffer but myself in the Dishonour that beset me ; and all you, Ladies, that are here, who are Master-pieces of Virtue and Goodness, will, I am certain, rather pity than deride the Misfortunes of a wretched Man and an unhappy Fair One, who has paid her Life for her Fault ; nay, I hope that you will forgive me if I am something too severe against the lovely Sex sometimes, and apt to suspect their Sincerity, since I have been so ill treated by one whom I adored, and thought the most perfect of all Womenkind : I never loved but one, and she deceived me ; and I would renounce the Sex for ever, were I not convinced by some here, that there are still such whose Virtue can stand all Trials ; and these I admire as Miracles in Nature. Peace, *said du Puis*, and proceed not to Invectives ; I know more of your Affairs than you your self, tho you never inform'd me of any thing : *Gallouin* was my intimate Friend, he died in words of penitence, and made a holy and good End, I rake not up his Ashes ; but yet, notwithstanding the Respect I owe to his Sister here present, *Madam de Londe*, I must ask



leave to say, in Vindication of the unfortunate *Silvia*, who is now also laid to rest in the silent Grave, that there are some Particulars in her History and yours, to which you your self are yet a Stranger: I have before told you, that *Gallouin* did not believe that *Silvia* was your Wife, but your Mistress; and so did not design the Injury he did you; and she was made to do what she did by magick Art and Philters, such as no human Power or Virtue can resist the Force of: In a word, *Gallouin* was well skill'd in dangerous and unlawful Arts, and made too good use of them on this fatal Occasion; and I may perhaps explain these things some other time more fully. All I shall at present say, is, that the unhappy *Silvia*, tho' in appearance criminal, was in reality altogether innocent. And now you may proceed in your Discourse: Madam de *Londé* knows what I have told her in relation to this Affair. I suppose every body is at present impatient to hear the Story; therefore go on, and when I come to relate mine, as I have promised to Madam de *Contamine*, I shall tell you how I came to know these Particulars of the unfortunate *Silvia* and *Gallouin*.

Dinner being ended, the whole Company, who were all eager to hear this Story, of which they had heard only some Circumstances before, such as might justly excite their Curiosities, but not satisfy them, arose and went into a Withdrawing-room, where the Ladies,

## French LOVERS. 267

Ladies, being seated, press'd Monsieur *des Frans* to begin his Story; and the Servants being order'd to withdraw, he began the sad Tale, after saying, Ladies, I am going to discover my own Dishonour, and shall expose myself to the greatest Confusion; but since my Secrets will be reveal'd to none but this illustrious Company, I shall do it without regret. He mused for some Minutes, and then began his Narrative as follows.

*The End of the First Volume.*



BOOKS Printed for J. Darby, A. Bettesworth, F. Fayram, J. Pemberton, C. Rivington, J. Hooke, F. Clay, J. Batley, and E. Symon.

**B**ehn's Plays, 4 Vol.  
—— Novels, 2 Vol. with Cuts.

Rowe's Callipedia, with Cuts.

Osborne's Works, 2 Vol.

History of England, 4 Vol. to the Death of Queen Anne, with the Effigies of all the Kings and Queens.

Orleans's History of the Revolutions in England.

Antiquities of Westminster, 2 Vol. with Cuts.

Tatlers, 5 Vol.

Betterton's Life; with the Amorous Widow, or Wanton Wife.

Blackmore's Ecclesiastical Antiquities, 2 Vol. Abridg'd from Bingham.

Du Pin's Method of studying Divinity.

Devout Christian's Companion, 2 Parts.

Select Novels, with Cuts, 2 Vol.

Hawney's Compleat Measurer, 2d Edit.

—— Doctrine of Trigonometry.

Dacier's Plato in English, 2 Vol. 2d Edit.

Munday's Spelling-Book, for the use of Charity-Schools.

Secret History of Whitehall, 2 Vol. 2d Edit.

Atalantis, 4 Vol.

Life of the Count de Viménil.

—— of Madam de Beaumont.

—— and amorous Adventures of Lucinda.

The Adventures of the Lady Lucy.

The Noble Slaves.

The Adventures of Prince Clermont, and Madam de Ravezan. In four Parts.

Dr. Sydenham's Practical Works, 7th Edit.

Dr. Strother's Pharmacopeia.

Howel's Hist. of the Bible, 3 Vol. with Cuts, 4th Edit.

Cassandra, a Romance, in 5 Vol. 12mo.

